



CHRIST

THE ETERNAL

SON OF GOD

**"I AM ALPHA AND OMEGA
THE BEGINNING AND THE END"**

Revelation 22 : 13

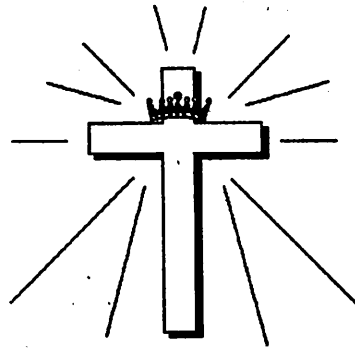
By
Rev. Dr. Andrew J. Losier

Not to be Sold

CHRIST THE ETERNAL SON OF GOD

**"I AM ALPHA AND OMEGA
THE BEGINNING AND THE END"**

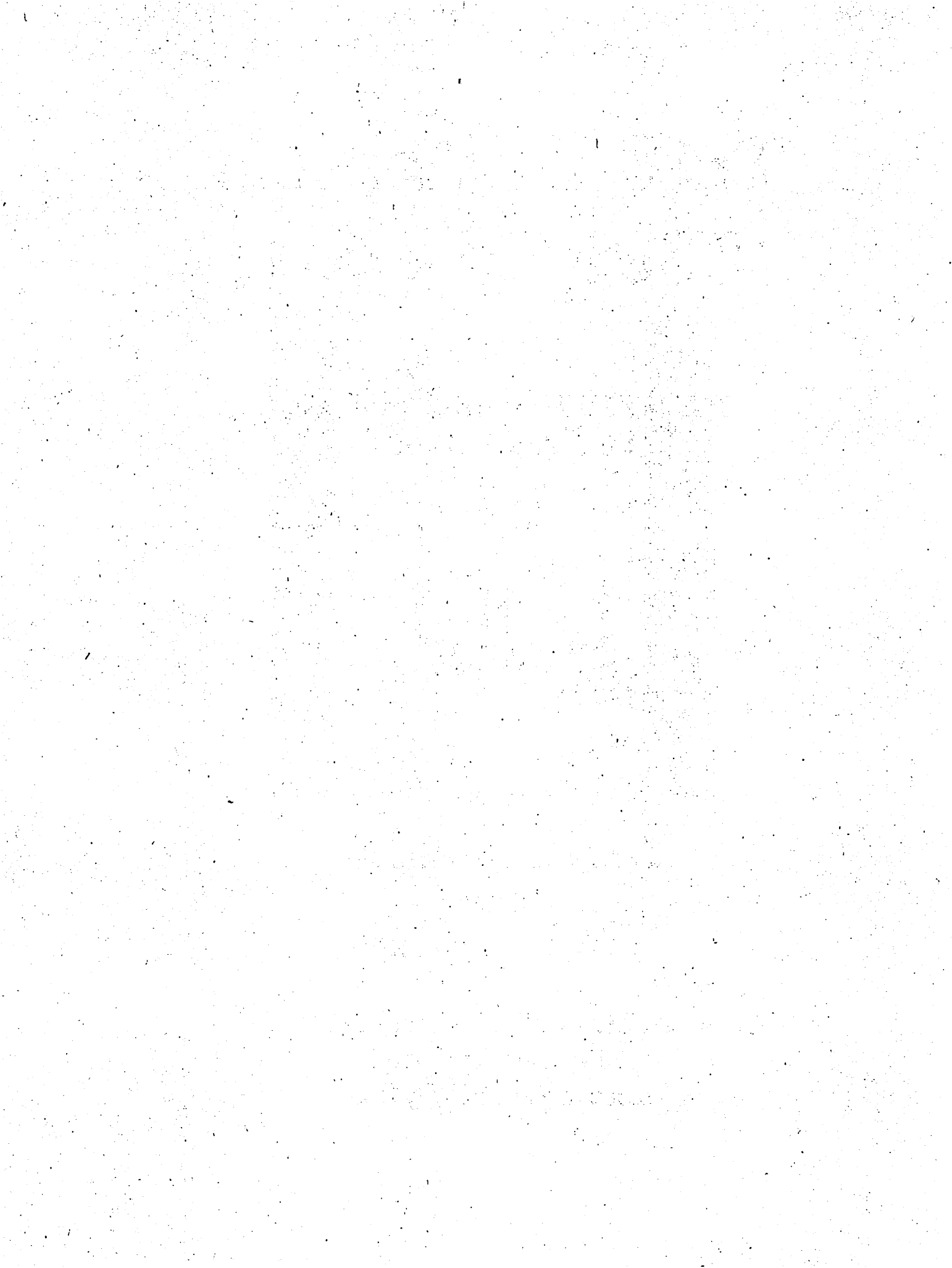
Revelation 22 : 13



**By
Rev. Dr. Andrew J. Losier**

**Founder and President
of
Christian Literature and Bible Center Inc.**

Not to be Sold





*In Memory of
Dorothy Leona Losier
1911 - 1992*

A MEMORIAL TO MY BELOVED DOROTHY

"My Beloved Wife" of 55 years of married life save 5 days is now safely in the presence of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the saints of all ages. She has escaped from her pains and has gained Paradise, re-united with many of our loved ones, who have gone on before. It is no doubt a busy time for her, sharing the news of the affairs of this earth. But most of all she is seeing her Savior, "face to face". We have asked the Lord, as she was suffering from cancer that the Lord would give her a painless farewell to this old world. As my son Tom, and Carol his wife and I watched our beloved slip away from this earth, she spoke my name, "Andy" and then as she quietly was breathing her last, she took a final breath and with a wonderful smile, left her body, and was carried into heaven by her ministering angel. Yes, we wept as we said goodbye, and will continue to weep, not as others who have no hope, but as the loss of our "Beloved", but praise God, the Lord's gain.

Dorothy was born December 5th, 1911, and went to be with the Lord May 16th, 1992. Dorothy was a "Beloved Wife" and a "Mother" of nine children. Two of her daughters, Catherine Anne, and Carol Marie were there in Paradise to meet their mother, to share much news with each other. Jack, Becky, Paul, John, Roger, Tom and Margie, a fine family are left behind with their father. God has given us a wonderful family with precious "In Laws" and twelve grandchildren.

The greatest memorial that we can give to our "Beloved" is a legacy through the printed Word of God. We will be sending several Biblical textbooks out to many places around the world in memory of her. To date we are printing 45,000 copies of the following. "The Battlefield and Warfare of the Christians", A Seminar on "The Second Coming of the Lord", and "Christ the Eternal Son of God". Thank you for your part in making this special memorial to Dorothy possible.

Yours for the furthering of the Gospel.

Rev. Dr. Andrew J. Losier,
Founder & President
Christian Literature and Bible Center, Inc.

U.S. America

DEDICATION

In all of our mission years, both on the field of service and while on furlough, there have always been outstanding Saints of God whom we could rely upon to uphold us in prayer. We thank God for the many Saints who have upheld us daily in prayer, for without these prayer warriors, the task would have been impossible. I wish to dedicate this Biblical textbook to all of our prayer warriors, who have followed this mission enterprise down through these many years. Your prayers of faith, with thanksgiving have accomplished much to the glory and honor of the Lord. In our cooperation, one with another, we have been able to see the Lord do great and mighty things, which we did not even think were possible. "Call unto me, and I will answer thee, and show thee great and mighty things, which thou knowest not." Jer.33:3. The Lord has laid this work upon your hearts by faith, and I thank you for your continued prayer. "That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, may be able to comprehend, with all saints, what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height, and to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fullness of God. Now unto him who is able to do exceedingly abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us, unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout the ages, world without end. Amen." Eph.3:17-21.

It is also wonderful to have a great family, well taken care of by their faithful mother, who has now gone to be with the Lord. After the Lord, her family always came first. What a joy it was to have them gather around a table of plenty, and be satisfied, with some food left over. Then those precious times with family devotions, as we gathered around the Word of God and had prayer with Our Heavenly Father. In the writing of these textbooks, I owe much to my whole family, as they encouraged me and continue to teach me the use of these computers. My oldest son, Jack, started me off in teaching me the rudiments of the computer, in spite of my opposition. Jack's wife, Thelma helped get me over the hump with her typing. Becky proved what could be done, through some of my early writings. Tom and Carol greatly improved my confused format in producing the marvelous Biblical Manual. My son John with his knowledge of computer art, gave a tremendous spark to my writings with the inspiration from his dear wife, June. Although the other members of our family have always encouraged me in this work, they were usually too far away to give immediate help, but we have assurance that they upheld me with their prayers. Thanks be unto the Lord for a wonderful family!

I thank God for a family that has been dedicated to the Lord and has been kept in the hollow of His hand. Our desire is to glory in the Lord Jesus Christ, who is the Author and finisher of our faith. "For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding; That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God; Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness; Giving thanks unto the Father, who hath made us fit to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints of light; Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son; In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins" Col.1:9-14.

"Dad" Andrew J. Losier

FORWARD

It gives me great pleasure and joy to introduce you to a worker for the Lord whose zeal and labor of love is outstanding. Wherever there is activity for the Lord, and he can share in it, you can rest assured that he will be there. He is a mail carrier by trade, but a witness for the Lord by choice. I have asked Don Yager, of Berne, Indiana, to write the forward of this textbook, entitled "Christ the Eternal Son of God". Don and his wife Bernie have had a great part in sending out mail bags of these free textbooks for many years. I count it a privilege to have Don Yager write the forward on this important subject. Don has had a great part in the work entrusted to us, and he is also a newly appointed Director in the Christian Salvage Mission of Fowlerville, Michigan. He has also been appointed as a Director in the Christian Literature & Bible Center, Inc. Don, we appreciate your "Labor of Love" in helping to send out the Word of God by the tons.

DON YAGER OF BERNE INDIANA.

I first met Andy Losier in the late 1950's. Andy and his wife, Dorothy, visited the home of my wife's parents, Mr. and Mrs Jonas Sprunger, and showed slides of how they were spreading the Gospel in Africa. Andy had been a good friend of my wife's brother when they attended Wheaton College. Dorothy is a first cousin to my wife.

At that time Andy and Dorothy were using a truck equipped with an electric generator to show Gospel films to the African people. Andy told how they would arrive in a village in the daytime. They would pass out Gospel tracts and literature to the people who were hungry for reading material, and, then, invite them to see a film after dark. Many people accepted Christ as a result of seeing the film and reading the free literature. Andy was, and still is, a great believer in giving out free Gospel literature.

Several times Andy and Dorothy have stayed in our home, and we would hear more stories about giving out literature in Africa. Andy is great at making use of all kinds of materials to help distribute literature. One time he had a barrel full of tin cans of fresh sausage from a pig donated by Grover Liechty of Berne, Indiana. The canned sausages were packed in drums padded with used hay baler twine. In Africa the used twine was again used to tie cartons of Christian literature to be shipped to many parts of Africa from the Christian Literature & Bible Center Inc. Andy said the twine gave off a nice Indiana "hay smell".

Grace Bible Church has collected approximately 1000 lbs. of literature for this work. I removed the back seat from my car and my wife and I transported the collection to Pilgrim Tract Society. The next couple shipments of this used Christian literature were hauled by Remington Freight Lines free of charge to Pilgrim Tract Society in Randleman, North Carolina. Pilgrim Tract then suggested we find another outlet for our bigger and bigger collection of Christian literature. Andy felt Christian Salvage Mission of Fowlerville, Michigan would be the group to ship the literature world wide.

Andy's friend, Forest Balsiger, the Berne Oldsmobile dealer gave permission to use his front showroom as a public drop-off place of literature. We ran ads in the local papers requesting Christian literature for redistribution by Missionary Andy Losier. About 2 to 3 tons

of literature, some new, was received each year. About twice a year, I would use my Ford Van to transport the literature 180 miles to Christian Salvage Mission.

After serving 43 years in Africa, Andy and Dorothy "Retired" to Toccoa, Georgia. Andy was "Re-fired" and now writes Gospel books and mails out bags of literature from his basement office.

Economy Printing Concern of Berne, Indiana prints some of Andy's books. Andy asked me to be the local "Go-Between". When the 10,000 copies of each book are printed, I get as many copies as are needed to mail world-wide to the addresses furnished by Andy. The number of addresses have increased until in December 1991 there were eighty-four 65 lb. mail bags and 51 small boxes mailed around the world at the postage cost of \$4,100. Then Remington Freight Lines hauled the rest of the books, free of charge to Pilgrim Tract Society in Randleman, N.C. and, also, to the Ford dealer, Gary Smith, in Toccoa, Georgia.

Andy believes in sending out Christian literature. He says it is more economical, in this day and age, than sending missionaries. He sends a lot of material to National Bible Colleges and Seminaries, where his Bible study books are used as classroom textbooks. This is a splendid way in which the National Christian leaders can reach their own people for Jesus.

Don Yager of Berne, Indiana.

TESTIMONY FROM D.O. LIECHTY OF BERNE, INDIANA

I also wish to include a testimony sent from a man of God with whom I have had sweet Christian fellowship for many years. The Lord has spared him for many years, as an outstanding witness to the saving grace of our loving Lord. As I was preparing to go to the mission field, I received a great inspiration from this dear brother in the Lord. Brother Dave O. Liechty was born Feb.5, 1894 and as this goes to print, he is still on the firing line for the Lord. As I did, Dave also accepted Christ at the young age of 10, and at the age of 23, he dedicated his life to the Lord. One book beside the Bible that was a great help to him, was "Rightly Dividing the Word of Truth" by C.I.Scofield. It settled his understanding of the Bible on the assurance of salvation, being saved by grace and not by works. Dave grew up on the farm, learned carpentry, upholstered furniture, was involved in the poultry business. Dave retired at 75 years of age, but started another business of coal and supplies. His wife, Elma, has gone to be with the Lord, and his two capable daughters look after their Dad. He still maintains a workshop and is in good health for his age. His great love for the Word of God keeps him studying the Bible and encouraging the younger folks to surrender their lives to the Lord, so that they may know God's will for their lives. May I present to you David O. Liechty of Berne, Indiana.

DAVID O. LIECHTY OF BERNE INDIANA.

As a youth I claimed the promise in John 3:16. God sent his only Son, the Lord Jesus Christ, to die for my sins, so that I could have everlasting life. In time, I came to realize that I was not worthy because of my good deeds, but I was saved by faith, and kept only by God's marvelous grace. I rejoice and praise God daily for the health and strength He has given me to serve Him. "For by grace are you saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God - Not of works, lest any man should boast. For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them." Eph.2:8-10.

In the 98 years that God has given to me, I've experienced disappointments and sorrows, yet during both good times and bad times, the Lord has been faithful. I can say as Paul was led by the Holy Spirit to say; "For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us." Rom.8:18. I still enjoy reading and studying God's Word daily, and I am looking forward to the day when I will see my Savior face to face and spend eternity with Him.

Andy, in your many years of service in Africa, your faithfulness and fearless dedication was an inspiration to many. I pray that the Lord will continue to bless you in your present undertaking.

Yours in Our Loving Lord,

David O. Liechty

PREFACE

There is but one purpose in writing this textbook, concerning the Lord Jesus Christ, and that is to confirm what the Bible teaches as to who Christ really is. Men may have their opinions about Christ, but the Bible has the facts. The Gospel of John was written as Christianity was in its early stages, after that tremendous outpouring of the Holy Spirit according to Joel 2:28. It was also the confirmation, declaring Christ as the Creator and Eternal Son of God. "But these things are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name." Jn.20:31.

We will be journeying back into the eternal past, the creation, then on through the Old Testament, beholding Christ. The New Testament reveals the Incarnate Christ and takes us into the heavenlies, beholding the Bridegroom and that marvelous wedding that will take place when the Bride is raptured into his very presence. Christ of the kingdom of righteousness, will come forth as the King of kings and Lord of lords. Since Christ paid the penalty of the sins of the whole world, he will sit upon the supreme judgement seat and judge from the great white throne. Then we will behold the Christ of the New Heavens and the New Earth, where sin will be vanished forever.

Rev. Dr. Andrew J. Losier

CONTENTS

CHAPTER ONE

CHRIST IN THE ETERNAL PAST

CHAPTER TWO

CHRIST IN CREATION

CHAPTER THREE

CHRIST OF THE OLD TESTAMENT

CHAPTER FOUR

CHRIST THE INCARNATE ONE

CHAPTER FIVE

CHRIST THE BRIDEGROOM

CHAPTER SIX

CHRIST THE MIGHTY WARRIOR

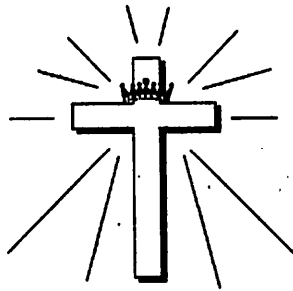
CHAPTER SEVEN

CHRIST THE KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS

CHAPTER EIGHT
CHRIST THE SUPREME JUDGE

CHAPTER NINE
CHRIST OF THE NEW HEAVENS AND THE NEW EARTH

CHAPTER ONE



Christ in the Eternal Past

CHAPTER ONE

CHRIST IN THE ETERNAL PAST

INTRODUCTION

The Bible is the living Word of God and gives us evidence far beyond the discoveries of human science. Let us study the Bible and establish our pattern of thought on "What the Word of God says". As a matter of fact, we will base our conclusions upon the Divine viewpoint, rather than a distorted human viewpoint. Our first and primary discovery from the Bible is that the Lord Jesus Christ has always existed, from eternity past with God the Father, as the Eternal Son of God. God the Holy Spirit revealed this to the Apostle John when he wrote, "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God." Jn. 1:1-2. May we emphasize that the Word was God, and not a mere expression of him. This takes us back before time became an issue, and before the creation of the heavens and the earth, and all that is within these hemispheres. Since the Lord Jesus Christ was the creator of all things, he certainly had to be in existence before time began. Most every appearance of Almighty is expressed through the Eternal Son of God. God the Father cannot be seen, but we have His identification through God the Eternal Son.

A very important fact that we as believers, must constantly be mindful of is that God always existed as Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. John testifies of this factor. "I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day, and heard

behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet, Saying, I am Alpha and Omeg'a, the first and the last;" Rev. 1:10-11a. "No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, who is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him." Jn. 1:18. God the Father can only be seen in God the Son, who is the image of the Father. May we be mindful of these important factors, as we study, concerning the Lord Jesus Christ as the Eternal Son of God. We will claim our evidence from the Bible as we view the various appearances of the Lord Jesus Christ.

Before time existed, God the Father planned that the Eternal Son of God was to be God the Father's gift to this world, expressing his eternal love toward his creatures. God the Father gave God the Son to be the Savior of the world. God the Eternal Son was not sent to condemn the world, but that those who believe in him might have eternal life. (John 3:16-17.) Christ the Eternal Son of God was the Father's gift to the world. (Isa. 9:6-7.) He is the ever-existing Son of God, having priority over all, and is revealed as the first begotten. The creative activity in the Godhead is all-inclusive and involves the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. The Eternal Son of God cannot be excluded from the great creation by "Elohim". (Jn. 1:1-3; Col.1:15-17; Gen.1:1-2; Job 26:13; 1 Cor.8:6.) Christ has always been in full status as the Eternal Son of God, and his incarnation, baptism, and resurrection are but evidences of his eternal existence. None of these events are to be considered as the beginning of his sonship but, rather, as confirmations that Christ as the Son of God existed in the beginning. Being involved in the creation of all things, gives Christ an eternal existence with God the Father and God the Holy Spirit. As we study this very important subject of Christ the eternal Son of God, we must be well established in what the Word of God has to say concerning it. If Christ were anything short of being the Son in the eternal Godhead, he would not qualify to be the propitiation for our sins.

He is the sum total of the absolute perfection in the Godhead and was given as both sacrifice and sacrificer for the sins of the whole world. The barrier of sin was removed by the impeccability of Christ the eternal Son of God, paying the total debt through His perfect sacrifice.

OUTLINE

- I. CHRIST HAS ALWAYS EXISTED**
- II. CHRIST IS THE EXACT EXPRESSION OF GOD THE FATHER**
- III. CHRIST HAS A PREPARED HUMAN BODY ASSIGNED UNTO HIM**
- IV. CHRIST IS THE ONLY WAY OF LIFE AS REDEEMER**
- V. CHRIST IS THE ETERNAL KING AND HIGH PRIEST**

I. CHRIST HAS ALWAYS EXISTED

The Lord Jesus Christ could not be any other, but the Eternal Son of God. If he were anything less than the Eternal Son of God, he would have been unable to become an atonement for our sins. There would always be a possibility of a created son of God sinning, and that would make salvation impossible. Christ, as the Eternal Son of God always existed as a member of the Eternal Godhead. Christ as the Eternal Son of God has always existed and has all of the attributes of God the Father and God the Holy Spirit. Had Christ been anything else but of eternity, those Old Testament sacrifices would have all been in vain, as they could not have covered the people sins, since a perfect sacrifice would not be available in the future. This will be dealt with in chapter three. It took the sinless perfection and impeccability of Almighty God to make possible the remission of sins. It was in the plan of God the Father to not only provide salvation for mankind, but also deal with the sin question once and forever. In God's omniscience, plans were made in eternal past to deal with all godlessness before it occurred. God the Son was appointed to become the sacrificer and the sacrifice for all sin. Therefore it is written, "Sacrifice and offering thou didst not desire; mine ears hast thou opened; burnt offering and sin offering hast thou not required. Then said I, Lo, I come; in the volume of the book it is written of me." Ps.40:6-7. Then read the sequence of this statement. "Wherefore, when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me; In burnt offerings and sacrifice for sin thou hast no pleasure. Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me) to do thy will, O God." Heb.10:5-7. Regardless of the various comments on these portions of God's Word, we are aware that all of these preparations were made before time existed. God knew that sin would express itself, when both angels and mankind would be created with freedom of choice, and he dealt with the future problem in eternity past.

The Lord Jesus Christ, having been with God the Father from the very beginning, was given all authority before time existed. "For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet." 1 Cor.15:25. Christ himself also proclaimed, "All things are delivered unto me by my Father, and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, except the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him." Matt.11:27. This of course reveals the intimacy that the Eternal Son and God the Father always have had with one another. Christ was constantly in communication with the Father, and every divine statement that Christ made gave evidence to us that he was the express image of God the Father. You recall when Simon declared that Christ was the Son of the living God, what the Lord's answer was? "And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona; for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father, who is in heaven." Matt.16:17 Each specific statement of the Lord Jesus Christ, revealed this close communion with the Father. "Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you that in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father, who is in heaven." Matt.18:10.

Christ as the Eternal Son of God is declared "from everlasting". "But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel, whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting." Mic.5:2. The birth of Jesus as a babe in a manger is but the means which the Eternal Son of God used as his entrance to planet earth, to fulfill his assignment from the Father as the Savior of the world. Christ has always existed with God the Father in his eternal activities. He has always been the second person of the Trinity. Christ has been involved with all creation and was chosen to be the Redeemer, to pay the debt of the sins of the whole world. Christ's incarnation, baptism, transfiguration, and resurrection were but verifications of the eternal Sonship of the Lord Jesus Christ.

It is of great importance that we understand the various statements of the Lord as he spent those 33 years upon this earth. The scribes and Pharisees understood exactly what the Lord was saying, declaring himself to be Jehovah. "Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am" Jn.8:58. They knew that he had declared himself to be Jehovah. "Then took they up stones to cast at him;" Jn.8:59a He used that same expression when he said, "I am the bread of life;" Jn.6:35a. The power of the Eternal Son of God was manifested when he was in the garden of Gethsemane and about to be taken as a prisoner. "Jesus, therefore, knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, Whom seek ye? They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am he, and Judas also, who betrayed him, stood with them. As soon, then, as he had said unto them, I am he, they went backward, and fell to the ground." Jn.18:4-6. The power of the Everlasting Jehovah was experienced, when these soldiers fell backward, being in the very presence of Jehovah. Christ proclaimed, "I am the light of the world" Jn.8:12; Jn.9:5. "I am the door" Jn.9:5; Jn.10:7,9. "I am the good shepherd" Jn.10:14. "I am the resurrection and the life". Jn.11:25. "I am the way, the truth and the life." Jn.14:6. "I am the true vine" Jn.15:1,5. "I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, who is, and who was, and who is to come, the Almighty." Rev.1:8, and "I am the first and the last;" Rev.1:17b.

If the life of Christ only began at the birth of Jesus as a babe, then all that Christ claimed to be would be false. This, of course, is not the case, for we have the personal witness from the Eternal Son of God. We will further discuss the evidence from the Bible regarding the pre-

existence of the Lord. If the Lord Jesus Christ was not eternal, it would deny the proclamation from the Bible that declared Christ as the Creator of heaven and earth. Praise God, we know that our Redeemer has always existed and ever shall exist! The Bible clearly sets forth the Lord Jesus Christ as the Eternal Son of God. "But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name." Jn.20:31. Christ is the source of eternal life, and that fact establishes his existence in eternity past.

We cannot over emphasize the eternal existence of the Son of God, and we have dealt with this issue as being revealed in the Old Testament. He was the source of water from the rock, the bread of life, the manna in the wilderness, and the Divine Captain as seen by Joshua (Josh.4:13-15.) The Son of God was present with Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-nego as they were cast into the fiery furnace. The Son of God was present as Abraham met three men as they came to his tent. It is also important for us to remember that nothing can be added to, or taken away from the Triune God. "Jesus Christ, the same yesterday, and today, and forever." Heb.13:8.

We will be studying, in brief, the fact that the Lord Jesus Christ is the complete expression of the Godhead. To us, as human creatures, this is of great importance, for we were in need of an absolute perfect and impeccable sacrifice for our sins, and Christ is the only possible source. The Triune God is declared as equal in all of their attributes, and eternal existence is one of these attributes. Christ is not an exception. "For in him dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead bodily." Col.2:9. We will be reminded that Christ of the eternal past has never had a beginning, but he always existed and became the Creator of all things. "Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of all creation; For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him. And he is before all things, and by him all things consist." Col.1:15-17. The "firstborn" in reference to Christ does not refer to being created, for he is the Creator of all things. This refers to his eternal existence, before all things in eternity past. Christ is self-existent as are God the Father and God the Holy Spirit. The firstborn issue is based upon the incarnation of Christ through the hypostatical union.

II. CHRIST IS THE EXACT EXPRESSION OF GOD THE FATHER.

Since Christ declared himself as the great "I Am", we then can relate the Old Testament revelations to the Lord Jesus Christ. This is dealt with fully in chapter three. However, we need to relate the ever-existing God the Father as being fully expressed in the Eternal Son of God. Since Christ is the Savior, please note the following: "And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel. I Am hath sent me to you. And God said moreover unto Moses, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, The Lord God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, hath sent me unto you; this is my name forever, and this is my memorial unto all generations." Ex.3:14-15. Moses desired to see the face of the Lord, but as he was hidden in the cleft of the rock, he could only see the afterglow of the Lord. "And he said, I beseech thee, show me thy glory. And he said, I will make all my goodness pass before thee, and I will proclaim the name of the Lord before thee, and will be gracious to whom I will be gracious, and will show mercy on

whom I will show mercy. And he said, Thou canst not see my face; for there shall no man see me, and live. And the Lord said, Behold, there is a place by me, and thou shalt stand upon a rock; And it shall come to pass, while my glory passeth by, that I will put thee in a cleft of the rock, and will cover thee with my hand while I pass by; And I will take away mine hand, and thou shalt see my back; but my face shall not be seen." Ex.33:18-23.

Elijah also desired to see the expression of God in some material way. "And he said, Go forth and stand upon the mount before the Lord. And, behold, the Lord passed by, and a great and strong wind rent the mountains, and broke in pieces the rocks before the Lord; but the Lord was not in the wind. And after the wind an earthquake; but the Lord was not in the earthquake. And after the earthquake a fire; but the Lord was not in the fire. And after the fire a still, small voice. And it was so, when Elijah heard it, that he wrapped his face in his mantle, and went out, and stood in the entrance of the cave. And, behold, there came a voice unto him, and said, What doest thou here, Elijah?.....Yet I have left me seven thousand in Israel, all the knees which have not bowed unto Baal, and every mouth which hath not kissed him." 1 Ki.19:11-18.

The Lord Jesus Christ is the expression of God the Father to all mankind, and as some have already seen the Lord of glory, so someday we shall all behold him face to face. "Beloved, now are we the children of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be, but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is." 1 Jn.3:2. That will be a glorious day when we see the Eternal Son of God, face to face and be like him in a glorified body, eternally in the heavenlies. "For now we see in a mirror, darkly; but then, face to face; now I know in part, but then shall I know even as also I am known." 1 Cor.13:12. "The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand." Jn.3:35. We have a glorious Savior, loved eternally by God the Father. A great future has been prepared for the saints, even from the foundation of the world. "Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:" Matt.25:34. That kingdom was first appointed unto Christ as an expression of the love that the Father has for his Son. "And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me." Lk.22:29. As we read and study the Bible we become aware that Christ is the image of the Father, who is expressing his Father's love to us all through his Son, the Lord Jesus Christ. That is why the Lord could say, "If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also; and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him. Philip saith unto him, Lord, show us the Father, and it sufficeth us. Jesus saith unto him, Have I been such a long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? He that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Show us the Father? Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The words that I speak unto you, I speak not of myself; but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works. Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me; or else believe me for the very works' sake. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do, because I go unto my Father." Jn.14:7-12. To know Christ the Son of God is to know God the Father in his fullness. Being equal with God the Father is a declaration by Christ that he is equal with the Father as the Eternal Son of God from eternity past.

GREATER WORKS

Christ is the heavenly power and authority, and when he says that we can do greater works than he did during his earthly ministry, it is very significant. What did he refer to? These greater works can only be accomplished through God the Holy Spirit, whom he sent after his ascension. The greater works are through the Holy Spirit providing the newness of life, making all believers new creatures in Christ Jesus. These are the greater works that are continually being accomplished from Pentecost until the Rapture. These greater works have been made possible through the death and resurrection of the Lord Jesus Christ. The Holy Spirit was always present in this world, being omnipresent as God the Father and God the Son. However, from Pentecost onward until the Rapture of the saints, a bride is being gathered for the Lord and given a new birth by God the Holy Spirit, who also dwells within "The Bride-To-Be" forever and ever.

PERFECT UNITY

There is perfect unity within the Godhead, and Christ makes it plain and simple, that God the Father and God the Son are in perfect harmony in all things. The Lord declared, "I and my Father are one." Jn.10:30. This unity existed from eternity past, and both the Father and the Son have the same characteristics. There was never a time when both the Son and the Father did not exist together in the heavenlies. The Lord Jesus Christ was given an assignment that required a great sacrifice. The Eternal Son of God was to take upon himself a form of created man. God the Holy Spirit was chosen to supervise the transaction. However his human body was absolutely perfect, impeccable, and divinely prepared.

THE EARTHLY EXPRESSION OF GOD THE FATHER.

Since no creature can look upon God the Father, provision has been made in that God the Eternal Son is the expression of God the Father. This was predicted through the prophet Isaiah. "For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given, the government shall be upon his shoulder; and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The Mighty God, THE EVERLASTING FATHER, The Prince of Peace." Isa.9:6. The Lord Jesus Christ, being like God the Father, represents His Father to us, and that is why he is called "The Everlasting Father". In the Lord Jesus Christ, we have our all in all! We will continue with Biblical evidence that Christ has always been the Eternal Son of God and is the exact expression of the Father, being declared the Everlasting Father. "I will declare the decree: The Lord hath said unto me, Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee. Ask of me, and I shall give thee the nations for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession. Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel. Be wise now, therefore, O ye kings; be instructed, ye judges of the earth. Serve the Lord with fear, and rejoice with trembling. Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they who put their trust in him." Ps.2:7-12.

To us who have accepted the Lord as our Savior, he is the Eternal Son of God and also reveals to us God the Father, and thereby we can declare him "The Everlasting Father". "I and the Father are one" Jn.10:30. Thomas could cry out, "My Lord and my God". Jn.20:28b. The

Holy Spirit also revealed to us, "Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God, but made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men;" Phil.2:6-7. Since Christ is the Creator of everything, he could take upon himself either a form of an angel or a form of man, apart from sin. There is nothing lacking in the Lord Jesus Christ. "For in him dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead bodily." Col.2:9. As Christ is our all in all, so we read, "Christ came, who is over all, God blessed forever. Amen." Rom.9:5b. As The Lord Jesus Christ came once to this planet earth, so we look forward to his return. "Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Savior, Jesus Christ, who gave himself for us that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a people of his own, zealous of good works." Tit.2:13-14. Make no mistake about this one eternal fact, and that is , the Lord Jesus Christ is the Eternal Son of God. "But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is forever and ever; a scepter of righteousness is the scepter of thy kingdom." Heb.1:8. It was God's Eternal Son who came down to earth, in fulfillment of the Father's plans, to be after the order of Melchizedek. "And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true; and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life." 1 Jn.5:20. May God the Holy Spirit guide and teach each of you these Biblical truths. Without the Holy Spirit guiding you, it would be impossible to understand God's revelation.

III. CHRIST HAS A PREPARED HUMAN BODY ASSIGNED UNTO HIM

Christ is the first fruit of our redemption, which necessitates a first body, prepared in eternity past. "I, even I, am the Lord, and beside me there is no savior. I have declared, and have saved, and I have shown, when there was no strange god among you; therefore, ye are my witnesses, saith the Lord, that I am God. Yea, before the day was, I am he; and there is none that can deliver out of my hand; I will work, and who shall hinder it?" Isa.43:11-13. Yes, before days existed, God the Father had ordained his Son to become the savior of the world. This all happened before creation began, in God's Master plan. One may say, but sir, the prophecy relates that a virgin would bring forth a Son. "Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, the virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel." Isa.7:14. This was as a sign, so that especially Israel would know the manner in which the Messiah would enter this world. We attempt to solve this mystery from the human point of view and lose sight of the Scripture foretelling, "Before Abraham was I am". As you study chapters two and three, we have thoroughly treated this issue. However, the Messiah is the Creator of heaven and earth. If you attempt to limit his existence as a babe in the manger, you will either conclude that the Virgin was the mother of God, or Christ was the greatest impostor that ever lived. The virgin birth was a specific sign to Israel, fulfilling the unconditional covenant that God made with both Abraham and David. The first utterance of this was recorded in Genesis 3:15. It was the seed of the woman, declared by God to destroy the serpent, the devil. It was the plan of God for his Eternal Son to enter into this world to become the Redeemer and Savior for mankind. However this body was prepared before the foundation of the world. "Who is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of all creation; For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether

they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers - all things were created by him, and for him; And he is before all things, and by him all things consist." Col.1:15-17 We were chosen in the Lord before the foundation of the world, which implied that a sacrificial body was prepared for the Lord before the creation. Christ is the expression of God the Father and co-equal with him in all respects. The Word of God became flesh and dwelt among us. (Jn.1:1-4; Jn.1:14.)

Our main emphasis at this time is the eternal existence of the Lord Jesus Christ, with the Father, before time began. Let us list our reasons for such a statement.

- a. **Christ himself has declared it. (Jn.10:30; Phil.2:6).**
- b. **The Bible says so. (Jn.1:1-2; Isa.9:6-7.Heb.1:1-8. Ps.2:6-12).**
- c. **God the Father and God the Son, are equal. (Jn.1:18; Jn.5:17-47; Phil.2:6-11.)**
- d. **Christ is the Creator of heaven and earth. (Jn.1:3.)**
- e. **God the Father reveals himself through the Lord Jesus Christ. (Matt.6:1-32; Matt.12:50; Matt.16:27; Matt.17:1-5; Lk.10:22; Lk.22:29).**
- f. **Christ knows the perfect will of God the Father. (Matt.18:35; Matt.20:23; Matt.24:36; Matt.25:34; Jn.13:1; Jn.14:6; Jn.12:26-50).**
- g. **God the Father and God the Son have the same- personality. (Matt.11:27; Jn.6:46; Jn.10:15-38; Jn.14:7-12).**

This prepared human body, being the first fruit of the human race, seems to be a problem to our finite minds, and rightly so. However, we have sufficient examples from the Bible indicating that, with God, time is no issue. "But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day" 2 Pet.3:8. We have sufficient evidence from the Bible, in the realm of prophecy that God can reveal visions of things yet to come. The prophets of old actually had previews of things to come. Daniel was given visions of great empires to come. Ezekiel and Zechariah saw battles to be fought. Isaiah was given the sign of the virgin birth of the Messiah. Jeremiah saw the regathering of Israel back to the promised land. John, on the Isle of Patmos, had a preview of the great tribulation and the heavenly battle against Satan and his demons. He saw, in vision, the marriage of the Lamb, the great battle of Armageddon, the kingdom of righteousness, and the great white throne judgement. Even the temple to be was so real that he was to measure it for accuracy. He saw the Holy City coming down from heaven and determined the shape and measurements of it. The new heavens and the new earth, as well as Paradise, were all seen by John. Therefore, what could hinder the Lord Jesus Christ from being portrayed in the eternity past? With God, all things are possible!

There is a very important factor to be noted as to the very demons being able to recognize Jesus Christ the Eternal Son of God. "And when he was come to the other side into

the country of the Gadarenes, there met him two possessed with demons, coming out of the tombs, exceedingly fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? Art thou come here to torment us before the time? And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding. So the demons besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, permit us to go away into the herd of swine. And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine; and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters." Matt. 8:28-32. (Mk. 5:1-21; Lk. 8:26-40.) Did you note, that the demons, as fallen angels recognized the Eternal Son of God? Also did you notice that these demons were aware of their coming judgement? Christ as the Eternal Son of God, had power to cast them into eternity bound until their day of judgement.

IV. CHRIST IS THE ONLY WAY OF LIFE AS REDEEMER

CHRIST HIMSELF DECLARES THE WAY.

The Lord Jesus Christ clearly declared, "I am the way, the truth, and the life; no man cometh unto the Father, but by me." Jn. 14:6. This may seem to some, to be unfair and very limited in the approach to God the Father, but, on the contrary, it is the absolute and definite approach to God the Father. Otherwise, salvation would be distorted and confused. Christ confirms his Deity many times, so let us just mention a few. "My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me. And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. My Father, who gave them to me, is greater than all, and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand. I and my Father are one." Jn. 10:27-30. "As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father, and I lay down my life for the sheep." Jn. 10:15. "Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am." Jn. 8:58. This certainly presents the Lord Jesus Christ as the Eternal Son of God.

THE WORKS OF CHRIST BEAR WITNESS.

We cannot doubt the statements of one who has so great a cloud of witnesses as to these great works which he performed when upon this planet earth. The Old Testament records prepare us for God to be with us, and the New Testament declares Christ's deity through the very works which he performed. The Lord Jesus Christ, through the works which he did while on earth, proved that he was sent directly by God the Father. "But I have greater witness than that of John; for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me." Jn. 5:36. Who but the Lord Jesus Christ could say, "I am the resurrection, and the life; he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live. And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?" Jn. 11:25-26. The raising of Lazarus was sufficient evidence to confirm this statement. Only God could make such a statement, as he is the source of all life. We could write pages as to the evidence of the great and mighty works which Christ did during those few years upon this earth. "And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book." Jn. 20:30. "This is the disciple who testifieth of these things, and wrote these things;

and we know that his testimony is true. And there are also many other things which Jesus did, which if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen." Jn.21:24-25.

THE FATHER HIMSELF CONFIRMS THIS TRUTH.

"And the Father himself, who hath sent me, hath borne witness of me." Jn.5:37a. "And after six days Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John, his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain privately, and was transfigured before them; and his face did shine like the sun, and his raiment was white as the light. And behold there appeared unto them Moses and Elijah talking with him. Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here; if thou wilt, let us make here three booths; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah. While he yet spoke, behold a bright cloud overshadowed them; and, behold, a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him. And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were very much afraid. And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid. And when they had lifted up their eyes, they saw no man, except Jesus only." Matt.17:1-8. If the Lord Jesus Christ had been only another man, as the prophets were, then it would have been in order to acknowledge Moses and Elijah, but Christ is the Eternal Son of God. The communication between God the Father and God the Son must be put on an equal basis, with a perfect harmony between the two. The study of the various recorded prayers of Christ confirm this. One of the outstanding prayers is recorded in John chapter 17. Study this carefully and note the intimacy that is expressed by Christ. Also as Christ talked to the Father at the tomb of Lazarus, we witness that oneness in the Godhead. "Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. And I knew that thou hearest me always; but, because of the people who stand by I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me. And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with grave clothes; and his face was bound with a cloth. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go." Jn.11:42-44. Had Christ not mentioned the name "Lazarus", his great power would have brought forth all the dead! That great day shall come when the Eternal Son of God will bring forth all those who died in Christ to be raptured to heaven. There will also be another day when the Lord Jesus Christ will bring to life all of the unregenerate dead, to be judged at the great white throne. (Rev.20:11-15.)

THE WORD OF GOD EXPRESSES THE TRUTH

The Word of God is our proof concerning the Eternal Son of God being the only way of salvation, and all religions must acknowledge this factor if they are to claim eternal life. It is not sufficient to accept Jesus as a great prophet, or just one of many religious leaders, for he is the only way, the only truth, and the only life, and not one soul can come to God the Father in any other way but by the Lord Jesus Christ. The Word of God declares this from Genesis to the Book of Revelation. "Be it known unto you all, and to all people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you well. This is the stone which was set at naught of you

builders, which is become the head of the corner. Neither is there salvation in any other; for there is no other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved." Acts 4:10-12. We can depend upon the Word of God for many reasons:

1. **The Word is dictated by God the Holy Spirit. (2 Tim.3:16-17.)**
2. **The Word has been proven to be accurate in its past predictions. (Psalm 119; Gen.3:15; Isa.7:14; Gal.4:4-5.)**
3. **The Word has been consistent in all the writings though there were more than 40 writers and 66 Books of the Bible.**
4. **The Word of God is powerful under the authority of God. (Heb.4:12.)**
5. **The Word of God is the only complete and eternal record of the history of all mankind. (Matt.24:35.)**

V. CHRIST IS THE ETERNAL KING AND HIGH PRIEST

God the Father has declared his Eternal Son, the Lord Jesus Christ as King of kings and Lord of lords. "For he is Lord of lords, and King of kings, and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful." Rev.17:14b. Christ has been declared both King and priest after the order of Melchizedek. "The Lord has sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a priest forever after the order of Melchizedek." Ps.110:4. Melchizedek was a priest of the Most High God. (Gen. 14:18.) "For this Melchizedek, king of Salem, priest of the Most High God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, blessed him, To whom Abraham gave a tenth part of all; first being, by interpretation, King of righteousness, and after that also King of Salem, which is, King of peace; Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days nor end of life, but made like unto the Son of God; abideth a priest continually." Heb. 7:1-3. Since Melchizedek had no beginning nor ending of life, this would have to refer to the Lord Jesus Christ, the Eternal Son of God. This qualifies Christ to be both King and High Priest in the eternal realm. In God's omniscience, His Son, the Lord Jesus Christ, was declared both King and Priest forever. "Yet have I set my King upon my holy hill of Zion. I will declare the decree: The Lord hath said unto me, Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee." Ps.2:6-7.

CONCLUSION

This has been a very brief but specific study concerning Christ the Eternal Son of God, but the evidence from the Bible is sufficient. These closing Scriptures concerning the mysterious Melchizedek give us a special insight into the presence of Christ in the Old Testament, which we will deal with in chapter three. Our emphasis here is the fact that Melchizedek had no beginning or ending, and the only one who could be declared as such is God himself. This

presents Christ as being born as a babe in the manger, concluding that this was the beginning of his life. This is absolutely wrong, for the evidence in the Bible reveals Christ as always existing and eternally with God the Father. The entrance upon this planet earth for becoming the atonement for our sins did actually begin as the seed of the woman. However, we have presented ample proof that Christ always existed with God the Father. Christ was, and is, forever, 100 % God and 100% man, otherwise he would have never qualified to become the Redeemer. May I repeat that very important verse of scripture: "But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name." Jn.20:31.

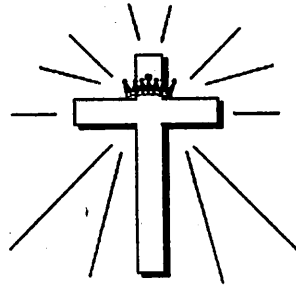
All the attributes contributed to God the Father and God the Holy Spirit apply to Christ the Eternal Son of God. He is very God and has made possible so great a salvation to all who believe. He is our source of eternal life, and, as believers, our lives are hidden in him for eternity. Christ is our all in all! Christ is 100% God and 100% man, from everlasting to everlasting, as the Eternal Son of God. He is the express image of God the Father and is the Creator of all things that were created and all that ever shall be created. "For it pleased the Father that in him should all the fullness dwell;" Col.1:19. "For in him dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead bodily." Col.2:9.

CHAPTER ONE QUESTIONS

1. **In this study of Christ, on what do we base our conclusions?**
2. **Explain John 1:1-2. Give a brief essay.**
3. **Why are we sure that Christ existed before creation?**
4. **Who is referred to in Revelation 1:10-11?**
5. **Explain the importance of John 1:18.**
6. **Give us the important 5 points as to the existence of Christ as the Eternal Son of God.**
7. **When were plans made for dealing with the sin question? By whom were these plans made?**
8. **Explain Psalm 40:6-7 and Hebrews 10:5-7.**
9. **Explain 1 Corinthians 15:25 and Matthew 11:27.**
10. **Give Scripture to prove intimate communication that Christ had with his Father.**

11. How do you explain, "Before Abraham was I am". Jn.8:58.
 12. Give as many of Christ's sayings starting with "I Am" as you remember. Quote Scriptures.
 13. Explain the purpose of Christ coming into this world as a "Babe in the Manger".
 14. Which is the most important factor: "The woman" or "The seed of the woman"? Explain why.
 15. What is the importance of John 20:31?
 16. What difference is there between God the Son and God the Father? Cite Scripture.
 17. Explain Exodus 3:14-15; and Exodus 33:18-23.
 18. Compare 1 Kings 19:11-18; and Zechariah 4:6.
 19. Recognizing Christ to be the Eternal Son of God the Father, write an essay on John 3:35; and John 5:25-29.
 20. What kind of greater works have Christians been able to do than what Christ did, according to John 14:7-12?
 21. Write briefly on "The Perfect Unity within the Trinity".
 22. Why was the virgin birth of Jesus necessary?
 23. Name seven reasons for the eternal existence of Christ and quote Scripture.
 24. How do we know that Christ is the only way of salvation?
 25. Why can we depend upon the Word of God?
 26. What does the Bible teach about Christ being both King and Priest?
 27. Write an essay on "After the Order of Melchizedek".
-

CHAPTER TWO



Christ in Creation

CHAPTER TWO

CHRIST IN CREATION

INTRODUCTION

The very first words in the Book of Genesis, in the Hebrew language are, "Barasheith Barah Elohim", "In the beginning God created". You will note that the plural word for God, "Elohim" is used, which indicates that the Triune God was involved in creation. This also shows the unity within the Godhead in creation, from which we can draw the conclusion of complete unison in the Master Plan of all ages. God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit are united in every activity, past, present, and future. However, we are desirous to emphasize the importance of the eternal existence of the Lord Jesus Christ, therefore we wish to search the Scripture for evidence that the Son of God has always been an equal partner in the Godhead.

We have had sufficient statements from the Bible, declaring Christ as the Eternal Son of God, and he has always existed with God the Father and God the Holy Spirit. Since the Son of God has also been the Creator of all things, he himself could not have been created, therefore he has always existed in eternity past, being co-equal with the Father and the Holy Spirit. There is sufficient evidence in the Bible of the Triune God being involved in the creation. However now we desire to behold our wonderful Lord Jesus Christ in his ability to create all things that ever were and ever will be created. "The heavens declare the glory of God, and the firmament showeth his handiwork. Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night showeth knowledge. There is no speech nor language where their voice is not heard. Their line is gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world. In them hath he set a tabernacle for the sun, which is like a bridegroom coming out of his chamber, and rejoiceth like a strong man to run a race. His going forth is from the end of the heaven, and his circuit unto the end of it; and there is nothing hidden from the heat thereof. The law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul; the testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple. The statutes of the Lord are right, rejoicing the heart; the commandment of the Lord is pure, enlightening the eyes. The fear of the Lord is clean, enduring forever; the ordinances of the Lord are true and righteous altogether. More to be desired are they than gold, yea, than much fine gold; sweeter also than honey and the honeycomb." Ps.19:1-10.

The Son of God having been with God the Father from the very beginning, makes him co-equal with God the Father. Christ being the exact expression of the Father, has declared the Godhead to us. "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not anything made that was made. In him was life; and the life was the light of men." Jn.1:1-4. It was the Eternal Son of God who has enlightened us, and through his marvelous creation has made us living souls. The mighty power of the Eternal Son of God has been manifested in the creation of heaven and earth. Just to behold this creation in which we live, should be sufficient proof to us of the great wisdom and power of the Lord Jesus Christ. With the vastness of the heavens and the wonders upon this earth, what can be compared to the mighty works of God? "Who hath directed the Spirit of the Lord, or being his counselor, hath taught him? With whom took he counsel, and who instructed him, and taught him in the path

of justice, and taught him knowledge, and showed to him the way of understanding?"
Isa.40:13-14.

OUTLINE

- I. **The Creation of the Heavens and the Earth.**
- II. **The Creation of the Angelic hosts.**
- III. **The Six days of creation upon Planet earth.**
- IV. **The creation of new creatures in Christ Jesus.**

I. **The Creation of the Heavens and the earth.**

"In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth." Gen.1:1.

The emphasis in the Book of Genesis deals mainly with the beginnings upon this earth, rather than taking us back to the beginnings of the heaven and the earth. The vastness of the heavens, causes us earth dwellers to marvel at the size and distances involved in outer space, as compared to our tiny earth. With all of the billions of planets and vast number of galaxy cities that we behold, and their exact movement through space, we can only declare that a Master mind has formulated all of this. God cries out to us, "To whom, then, will ye liken me, or shall I be equal? Saith the Holy One. Lift up your eyes on high, and behold who hath created these things, who bringeth out their host by number; he calleth them all by names by the greatness of his might; for he is strong in power. Not one faileth." Isa.40:25-26. The time element of God creating the heavens and earth is not the issue, for God is not subject to time in any sense of the word. If he wishes, he can create immediately, or he can create in such a way as submitting to the time element. God the Father has placed all creation into the hands of his Eternal Son! The greatness of our Triune God, goes far beyond the entire creation which we behold. "But who is able to build him an house, seeing the heaven and heaven of heavens cannot contain him?" 2 Chron.2:6a. Since we are primarily considering the workmanship of the Eternal Son of God, our main attention will be upon his position in the Godhead. "But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him." 1 Cor.8:6.

God's Precision Instrument of both Time and Direction.

The most accurate instrument which never needs any alterations is God's heavenly creation. Although the mariner has his compass and maps to direct him through the seas, yet he depends entirely on the accuracy of the sun, the moon and the stars for his final decision. God has never had to make adjustments with the heavenly movement, and never will. Although the

astronomers, with their calculations have found one whole 24 hour day missing in the heavens. This again reminds us of the accuracy of the Bible. We have that missing day recorded in two Biblical references. "Then spoke Joshua to the Lord in the day when the Lord delivered up the Amorites before the children of Israel, and he said in the sight of Israel, Sun, stand thou still upon Gibeon; and thou, Moon, in the valley of Aijalon. And the sun stood still, and the moon stayed, until the people had avenged themselves upon their enemies. Is not this written in the book of Jasher? So the sun stood still in the midst of heaven, and hastened not to go down about a whole day. And there was no day like that before it or after it, that the Lord harkened unto the voice of a man; for the Lord fought for Israel." Josh.10:12-14. Now this was not a complete 24 hours but lacked a few degrees of being a whole day, so we must now turn to an event which Hezekiah experienced. "And Hezekiah said unto Isaiah, What shall be the sign that the Lord will heal me, and that I shall go up into the house of the Lord the third day? And Isaiah said, This sign shalt thou have of the Lord, that the Lord will do the thing that he hath spoken. Shall the shadow go forward ten degrees, or go back ten degrees? And Hezekiah answered, It is a light thing for the shadow to go down ten degrees, nay, but let the shadow return backward ten degrees. And Isaiah, the prophet, cried unto the Lord, and he brought the shadow ten degrees backward, by which it had gone down in the dial of Ahaz." 2 Ki.20:8-11. This made a loss of a complete day in the heavens. The Creator of the universe, the Lord Jesus Christ, the Eternal Son of God has brought this to pass! Who but God could cause this vast universe to stand still for a whole 24 hour day? The mighty power of the Godhead was manifested in this marvelous creation of the Eternal Son of God!

Since the Book of Genesis, being the Book of beginnings does not dwell upon the original creation of the heavens and the earth, but merely states it as a fact. The restoration of the earth which was made void, will be dealt with as we examine other Scripture, bearing on the creation of the heavens and the earth. Therefore we need to search throughout the whole Bible to get a glimpse of the vastness of the heavens and the minute' part that the earth is, as we compare it with the heavens. However we will also discover the great importance that the earth has become in the great salvation plan of God. We want to examine some of the references of the creation of the heavens and the earth in their original status.

The Heavens and the earth declared as God's creation.

When God created the heavens and the earth, they were well pleasing in the sight of the Godhead. The disorder that came upon the earth was the work of the evil one. The creation mentioned in the first chapter consists of restoring order after chaos. The light from the heavens was made to shine through to the earth with the divisions of the waters in the sky and upon the earth. "And God said, Let the waters under heaven be gathered together under one place, and let the dry land appear: and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called he seas: and God saw that it was good." Gen.1:9-10.

In the Abrahamic covenant we have a mention of the countless number of the stars. "And he brought him forth abroad, and said, Look now toward heaven, and count the stars, if thou be able to number them: and he said unto him, So shall thy seed be." Gen.15:5. The astronomers of all ages, keep on discovering new clusters of stars, planets and galaxies in outer

space. There is no confusion in these developments, but an orderly fashion, created by God, showing forth his eternal wisdom and glory.

The important issue that we wish to declare is attributing all creation to the Triune God, as in contrast to evolution. The Bible clearly places all creation as the work of the Godhead. Since the Scripture declares Christ as the Creator, we then accept the fact that Christ always existed with God the Father and God the Holy Spirit. There is one amazing factor in the creation of the heavens and the earth, and that is the declaration of creating the earth as separate from the vastness of the heavens. There is a specific reason for this separation, as the earth was to become the theater of dealing with the sin question. The earth became the domain of Satan and his kingdom of darkness after he had committed sin. God will use this earth as his final battle against the evil forces. "Thus saith the Lord, the Holy One of Israel, and his Maker: Ask me of things to come concerning my sons; and concerning the work of my hands, command ye me. I have made the earth, and created man upon it; I, even my hands, have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded." Isa.45:11-13. God can develop his creation by his word, or allow time to have it's place as to what his purpose may be.

The Heavens of Heaven

As we study the Bible we learn of three heavens declared by God and the one nearest to the earth consists of the skies above it. We look up into the skies and we are amazed at the billions of stars and planets within the multitude of galaxies. They are important to this minute' earth, showing to mankind the signs of time as well as seasons upon this earth. The heavens which we behold represents the creation and glory of God's handiwork. Mankind, whether civilized or in heathendom, is without excuse. "For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness, because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shown it unto them. For the invisible things of him from creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse. Because, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful, but became vain in their own imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened." Rom.1:18-21. There is an interesting factor that I discovered, as a missionary living among the heathen nations. You never find an atheist among them, for they recognize that all things had to be created by someone greater than man. I have talked to many of these in the darkest of heathenism, and their belief is, "A Great God exists somewhere". When I ask them, "Why don't you worship this Great God"? The answer is always the same, "The Great God is very far away from us, but we are troubled by many spirits that are very close to us, and they need to be worshipped and feared." These poor souls have become vain in their imaginations as they continually grope in darkness. They have been thoroughly blinded by the god of this world system. "But if our gospel be hidden it is hidden to them that are lost, in whom the god of this age hath blinded the minds of them who believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them." 2 Cor.4:3-4.

The Third Heaven

The Bible teaches that there are at least three heavens, so let us travel into outer space and explore the second and third heavens. Astronomers and scientist keep probing the heavens in search of living creatures on Mars and other planets but fail to find any. We as Christian know that there are creatures in outer space. It is the dwelling of the Triune God as well as angels. "Know therefore this day, and consider it in thine heart, that the Lord, he is God in heaven above, and upon earth beneath; there is none else." Deut.4:39. The Cherubim and the Seraphim and all of God's angels dwell in the heavenly realm. "In the year that King Uzziah died, I saw also the Lord sitting upon a throne, high and lifted up, and his train filled the temple. Above it stood the seraphim: each one had six wings; with two he covered his face, and with two he covered his feet, and with two he did fly." Isa.6:1-2. "Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth, and I have set thee so; thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire." Ezek.28:14. "And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him." Lk.22:43. "Take heed that ye despise not one of these little one; for I say unto you that in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father, who is in heaven." Matt.18:10. This is certainly an indication of heavenly activity. Christ likened heaven in various ways, as he taught during his earthly ministry.

- 1. The Heavenly prayer to God the Father. (Matt. 6:9-13.)**
- 2. The Heavenly Wheat. (Matt. 13:24-30.)**
- 3. The Heavenly Growth as a Mustard Seed. (Matt. 13:31-32; Mk. 4:30-32.)**
- 4. The Heavenly Kingdom in contrast to Leaven. (Matt. 13:33-35; Lk. 13:20-21.)**
- 5. The Heavenly Kingdom like a Hidden Treasure. (Matt. 13:44.)**
- 6. The Heavenly Kingdom is like a Priceless Pearl. (Matt. 13:45-46.)**
- 7. The Heavenly Kingdom separating the good from the evil. (Matt. 13:47-51.)**
- 8. The Heavenly Kingdom and Rewards. (Matt. 20:1-16.)**
- 9. The Kingdom of Heaven as a Vineyard. (Matt. 21:33-46.)**
- 10. The kingdom of Heaven Prepared for the Marriage Feast. (Matt. 22:1-14.)**

Christ being the Eternal Son of God, can best describe Heaven to us, having been there in eternity past, as well as being the Creator. "And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man who is in heaven." Jn.3:13. After the ascension of the Lord Jesus Christ to his heavenly home, we have the testimony of Stephen as he was being stoned to death by the wicked religious leaders. "But he, being full of the Holy

Spirit, looked up steadfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God. And said, Behold, I see the heavens open, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God." Jn. 7:55-56. We also have the witness of Saul of Tarsus, who persecuted the Christians, until he met Christ face to face. "And as he journeyed, he came near Damascus, and suddenly there shone round about him a light from heaven; And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus, whom thou persecutest; it is hard for thee to kick against the goads." Acts.9:3-5. This was a tremendous revelation to Saul who became Paul the Apostle. Then Paul journeyed into Arabia for a period of three years, (Gal.1:15-18.). Paul gives us a terrific insight as to the third heaven, which he had a glimpse of the glory of God. He was in the very presence of the angels of God and beheld Paradise. "I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth) - such an one caught up to the third heaven. And I knew such a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth) -How he was caught up into Paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter." 2 Cor.12:2-4. As the thief on the cross was promised to be with Christ in Paradise, so we know that the saints of all ages are there at this very present time. The heavenly temple of God is in this third heaven as well, and there is no lack of constant activity in the presence of Almighty God.

All of the glorious things of heaven have been created by the Eternal Son of God. We also must remember that the Triune God is so great that the vastness of the heavens cannot contain him. "Behold, the heaven and the heaven of heavens belong to the Lord thy God, the earth also, with all that therein is." Deut.10:14. The question is often asked, where is God's dwelling place, to which Lucifer was set as a guard, preventing any angel to enter in? Well Solomon built a beautiful temple in Jerusalem for God to dwell in, but finally had to testify. "But will God indeed dwell on the earth? Behold, the heaven and heaven of heavens cannot contain thee; how much less this house that I have built." 1 Ki.8:27. We must conclude that the vastness of the heavens cannot limit or contain our true and living God. This whole universe is the creation of Christ the Eternal Son of God. It is Christ who set in orbit the billions upon billions of stars in perfect timing to manifest the eternal glory which the Triune God has always possessed.

The Planet Earth

"And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep." Gen.1:2a. "For thus saith the Lord who created the heavens, God himself who formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it not in vain, nor void, but he formed it to be inhabited: I am the Lord, and there is none else." Isa.45:18. "The earth is the Lord's, and the fullness thereof; the world and they who dwell therein. For he hath founded it upon the seas, and established it upon the floods. Who shall ascend into the hill of the Lord? Or who shall stand in his holy place? He who hath clean hands, and a pure heart, who hath not lifted up his soul unto vanity, nor sworn deceitfully. He shall receive the blessing from the Lord, and righteousness from the God of his salvation." Ps.24:1-5. "For God is my King of old, working salvation in the midst of the earth. Thou didst divide the sea by thy strength; thou didst break

the heads of the serpents in the waters. Thou didst break the heads leviathan (crocodile) in pieces, and gavest him to be food to the people inhabiting the wilderness. Thou didst break open the fountain and the flood; thou driedst up mighty rivers. The day is thine, and the night also is thine; thou hast prepared the light and the sun. Thou hast set all the borders of the earth; thou hast made summer and winter." Ps.74:12-17.

There are various opinions as to whether God created the earth as waste and void, to which I strongly object, for when God creates anything, he does a thorough job. The Bible gives us evidence as to what has happened to the earth that God created. When Lucifer, that mighty Cherub of God sinned against the Most High, and took with him one third of all of the angels, he usurped the planet earth as his domain. "They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, Is this the man who made the earth to tremble, who did shake kingdoms, who made the world like a wilderness, and destroyed its cities, who opened not the house of his prisoners?" Isa.14:16-17. Considering the creation of man upon the earth, when God restored the earth, who was there infiltrating the most beautiful animal in the garden of Eden? It was none other than Lucifer who became known as Satan, the devil and the serpent. It was Satan who tempted Christ and would have given him all of the kingdoms of the world, if he would have just bowed down and worshipped him. (Matt.4:8-11.) May I also remind you that Satan is the god of this whole world system and has tremendous power (under the sovereignty of God), that he is able to brain wash every soul coming into this world. "But if our gospel be hidden it is hidden to them that are lost, in whom the god of this age hath blinded the minds of them who believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them." 2 Cor.4:3-4. Satan certainly had access to the earth as of old even until now. "And the Lord said unto Satan, From where comest thou? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it." Job 1:7. "Be sober, be vigilant, because your adversary, the devil, like a roaring lion walketh about, seeking whom he may devour;" 1 Pet.5:8.

Satan is a powerful enemy to our soul and desires to thwart the purpose of God in every way possible. "By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned; therefore, I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God, and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness; I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee. Thou has defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy merchandise; therefore will I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee; it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee." Ezek.28:16-18. This is further evidence that Satan has established his domain upon this earth, both after he sinned against his Creator, and down through all of the ages. Satan and his billions of demons have great power to infiltrate creatures and take possession of their very behavior. Travel to the far corners of the earth and you will find human beings indwelt by the demons and sometimes given tremendous power, whereas they are able to walk upon hot coals of fire or be pierced through without the sign of blood. We will discuss this more fully, when dealing with Homo Sapien. Just to mention the false prophet of the great tribulation will have great skill in deceiving the earthly people with his miracles. (Rev.13:11-18.)

Almighty God keeps Satan within his sovereignty, so he is limited as to what he is able to do. Although at this stage of time, Satan is to be considered the god of this world system or age, according to the Word of God. (2 Cor.4:4.) But, all belongs to our Mighty God. "The heavens are thine; the earth also is thine; as for the world and the fullness thereof, thou hast founded them." Ps.89:11. There is nothing that was or existed before God, who is over all! "Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever thou hadst formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, thou art God." Ps.90:2.

God is mindful of this Planet Earth

We often ask ourselves, Why does God wait so long to establish his eternal kingdom? That of course is the human viewpoint, based upon the element of time. But God has never been limited by time. "But beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day." 2 Pet.3:8. As long as there are souls to be saved, the Lord will tarry, and I certainly rejoice in the Lord that he waited until I was born, and I became a new creature in Christ Jesus by accepting him as my personal savior. The Lord is mindful of every affair upon planet earth and is abiding his time. "That men may know that thou, whose name alone is the Lord, art the Most High over all the earth." Ps.83:18. "This shall be written for the generation to come; and the people who shall be created shall praise the Lord. For he hath looked down from the height of his sanctuary; from heaven did the Lord behold the earth, to hear the groaning of the prisoner; to loose those that are appointed to death; to declare the name of the Lord in Zion, and his praise in Jerusalem." Ps.102:18-21.

We realize God's eternal love for mankind, as we search the Scriptures which have been given to us by God the Holy Spirit. The great plan of salvation that was determined by the Triune God before the world was, is certainly evidence sufficient to be accepted. It was no small undertaking by God to take upon himself a form of man, apart from sin, to become the Redeemer. "For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through him might be saved." Jn.3:16-17. God desires that we should be clothed in his righteousness and holiness, that we might dwell with him forever, freed from the bondage of sin. "Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy. And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear, forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver and gold, from your vain manner of life received by tradition from your fathers, but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot, who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you, who by him do believe in God, who raised him up from the dead and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God." 1 Pet.1:16-21.

The Earth becomes the Final Battle Ground against Sin.

The first sin committed was in the heavenlies against our Holy God by his heavenly creatures. These evil forces were eventually poured out upon Planet Earth, of which we are aware. This cup of iniquity continues to saturate God's earthly realm under the deception of

Satan, who has usurped God's earthly possession. However, God has separated this small planet earth to deal with sin once and forever. This blight of sin was dealt with at the cross, by God the Father's Eternal Son. Though sin continues through the total depravity of man, being in bondage to the world, the flesh and the Devil, God's Master Plan is established in the heavenlies, and will come to the final conclusion upon this earth. When the Eternal Son of God is finally seated upon the Great White Throne, the total of all sin will be condemned forever and cast into the Lake of Fire. The Devil and his demons will have previously been cast into the Lake of Fire. "And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night forever and ever." Rev.20:10. We can praise God that the cause of the out break of sin, has been dealt with, once and forever at the cross. The unregenerate of all ages wait for the second resurrection when all of the dead of all ages will come forth at God's command and bow before the King of kings, and Lord of lords. (Phil.2:9-11.) The Apostle John on the Isle of Patmos had a preview of all of these things to come. "And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them." Rev.20:11. This describes the final end of both the present heavens and earth, where the contamination of sin had occurred. We are also reminded by the Bible that we who have accepted Christ as our personal Savior are richly blessed in that we will have part in the first resurrection of the Lord Jesus Christ. "Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection; on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years." Rev.20:6. We who are believers have already escaped that eternal separation that will come upon all of the unregenerate of all ages. May we be faithful to Him that has given us of the Holy Spirit as our guarantee.

The Final Destination of Total Sin.

Since God the Father has placed all power and authority in the hands of his Eternal Son, we behold the Lord Jesus Christ seated upon this Great White Throne, ready to make the final judgement against sin, of all ages. "And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God, and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life. And the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and hades (hell) delivered up the dead that were in them; and they were judged every man according to their works." Rev.20:12-13. This will be one of the most terrible gatherings of mankind of all ages. Some how, God's master television will bring before every unregenerate person his life story of his earthly works. They will all be placed upon the righteous balances of God and be found wanting. Although Christ had made possible their redemption through his blood, becoming a sacrifice for their sins, which they refused, and their names were not found in the book of life, they now will face judgement according to their own righteousness. These who stand before the great white throne, will be those who have failed to accept the grace of God through our loving Lord. "For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is a gift of God- Not of works, lest any man should boast." Eph.2:8-9. As every knee bows before the Lord, seated upon the white throne, they finally will have to confess that he is Lord to the glory of God the Father. We do not have all the details of this final judgement but the Word of God gives us sufficient proof of

their destination. "And death and hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire." Rev.20:14-15. We are also told in Daniel 9:24. (1) Sin will come to an end. (2) Then the Lord will bring in everlasting righteousness. The evil forces will never appear again, throughout eternity, for they will be sealed off somewhere, tormented forever in the lake of fire.

II. THE CREATION OF THE ANGELIC HOST.

INTRODUCTION

It is plausible that the heavens and the earth could have been created first as there would definitely have to be a place for the billions of angels to abide in. There is also a possibility that the heavens and the earth and the angelic hosts were simultaneously created. At any rate, we know that the angels are created beings for the spiritual realm of God. Christ the Eternal Son of God is their Creator, according to the Word of God. (Jn.1:3.) May we also remember that in the study of the Word of God, we will also discover that Christ is also called "The Angel of the Lord", "The Son of Man", and the Only Begotten". This does not mean that he is a created angel, or man, or begotten, but rather that Christ may appear in such a form for specific purposes. In this creative study, we want to emphasize the various divisions of angels, their duties, and their destiny. As we review these various positional angels, may we be aware that as the angels differ in their power and responsibility, so will the believers differ in responsibility, according to their faithfulness to God.

A. THE DIVISION OF THE ANGELS

Angels were not created equal in authority and power, but according to the desire of God. As with mankind, we are not all equal in talents, gifts and authority. The Lord pointed this out as he spoke in parables. "For the kingdom of heaven is like a man traveling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one, to every many according to his ability; and straightway took his journey." Matt.25:14-15. So let us look into the Bible and see the various divisions of angels which are recorded. They have been given power and authority with gifts, according to the will of Almighty God.

- a. CHERUBIM AND THE LIVING CREATURES**
- b. SERAPHIM**
- c. MICHAEL THE ARCHANGEL**
- d. GABRIEL**
- e. LUCIFER**

- f. ABADDON, APOLLYON, DESTROYER**
- g. MINISTERING ANGELS AND ELECT ANGELS**
- h. DESIGNATED ANGELS**

- a. THE CHERUBIM AND THE LIVING CREATURES**

The cherubim as we relate to the Bible are special angels which God has designated to protect his holy rights. You may recall that Lucifer was created as the supreme cherub of God, protecting the borders of God's privacy. He was considered as the "Son of the Morning" (Isa. 14:1.) and "Day Star" (Ezek.28:11-14.) He was the anointed Cherub, and number one in creation. His position has been taken from him, but his power under the sovereignty of God still remains. As has been studied, Satan has at his command billions of fallen angels, which are also called demons. Some have been so terrible that God had to place them in chains of darkness until their judgement day. (Jude 6.) Others are restrained from their terrible onslaught in the bottomless pit. (Rev.9:2-112.) Still others are under the Euphrates River, waiting their release to bring destruction and death during the great tribulation. (Rev.9:13-21.) We do not know if or how many of these fallen angels were among the cherubim of God. That is God's secret and may we be content in knowing that God has revealed to us sufficient for our days. The first mention that we have of the Cherubim in the Bible is found in Genesis 3:24. "So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden cherubim, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to guard the way of the tree of life." Evidently this guard over the tree of life was temporary, for the whole garden of Eden was covered over and became a dessert. That beautiful garden of Eden was covered over and today we have the evidence of this lush vegetation, being changed into the greatest deposits of oil in the world, which has been found in the Middle East. The Lord has ways and means of drawing these great empires in the right place at the right time. The Middle East is becoming the great conflict, with all the nations of the world. Israel is moving back to her own land and will be ready for the Millennium under the King of kings and Lord of lords.

May we remind ourselves that the whole angelic sphere goes far beyond our limited capacity. Our knowledge is very limited in this world and as to the time element, apart from God's revelation in the Bible. Even our knowledge of "Planet Earth" is very limited, in spite of much research. Man is speculating in outer space, hoping to find other inhabited spheres like the earth, and are even planning to send a colony of scientists to Mars. Since the unregenerate "Homo Sapiens" refuse God's Word on this subject, God has turned them over to confusion and a distorted mind. Of course there are creatures in outer space! God dwells in the heavens, as well as billions of his angels. These angels live and minister according to God's command. Certainly, the cherubim are far superior to man, and we can also include all of the angels of God as far superior to mankind. "What is man, that thou art mindful of him? And the son of man, that thou visitest him? For thou has made him a little lower than the angels, and has crowned him with glory and honor." Ps.8:4-5. (Heb.2:6-7.)

The cherubim are high and mighty angels with a holy position far above the other angelic hosts. They are usually associated as surrounding the Throne of God. The Living creatures, being a guard over the Throne of God as well as the privacy of God. We have evidence from the Book of Daniel, that Gabriel was aware of God's future plans. They certainly were present in such a vision which Daniel saw. "I beheld till the thrones were placed (cast down), and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head like pure wool; his throne was like the fiery flame, and his wheels as burning fire. A fiery stream issued and came forth from before him; a thousand thousands ministered unto him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him; the judgement was set, and the books were opened." Dan.7:9-10. Those angels which will minister to the Lord as he will sit upon the judgement seat are mighty angels. We can conclude that the cherubim and the four outstanding creatures which took the place of Lucifer when he sinned, will be present with the Lord. This judgement we will examine later on, but what I want to dwell on at this particular time is the importance of specific classifications of the angels which Christ the Eternal Son of God created.

It is amazing how the Holy Spirit gave such angelic information to such prophets as Ezekiel and Daniel, when Judah was in captivity. It but reminds us of God's assurance of his ever present help in the time of our greatest needs. "And I looked, and, behold, a whirlwind came out of the north, a great cloud, and a fire enfolding itself, and a brightness was about it, and out of the midst of it like the color of amber, out of the midst of the fire. Also out of the midst of it came likeness of four living creatures. And this was their appearance: they had the likeness of a man. And every one had four faces, and every one had four wings." Ezek.1:4-6. This description goes on into more detail, giving us a comparison as human beings as to what we better understand. We might conclude that these angels had four faces, but the importance of this description is that these angels were aware of all directions. The cherubim upon the mercy seat of pure gold were as a symbol of guardianship within the holy of holies. "And he made two cherubim of gold, beaten out of one piece made he the cherubim on the two ends thereof. And the cherubim spread out their wings on high, and covered with their wings over the mercy seat with their faces one to another; even toward the mercy seat were the faces of the cherubim." Ex.37:7-9. From this description we then can understand a little better what the Holy Spirit relates to us in Ezekiel 10:1-22. The eternal Son of God created these special angels to unfold the glory of God. "And the cherubim lifted up their wings, and mounted up from the earth in my sight; when they went out, the wheels also were beside them, and every one stood at the door of the east gate of the Lord's house, and the glory of the God of Israel was over them above." Ezek.10:19. Keeping within the context we read the next revelation, which refers the cherubim to the living creatures mentioned in the Word of God. "This is the living creature that I saw under the God of Israel by the river Chebar, and I knew that they were the cherubim." Ezek.10:20. To further confirm these created beings may we read Revelation chapter 4. The apostle John was taken into the throne room in heaven itself. The eternal God was seated upon his throne as the expression of God the Father, and round about him were 24 thrones. Before these thrones there were billions of bright and shining souls, as a sea of glass. Now note the following statement. "And round about the throne, were four living creatures full of eyes in front and behind" This explains why they are capable of seeing in every direction, and appearing to Ezekiel as having four heads. All of this will be a prelude to the Son of God appearing as a Lamb from the tribe of Judah, who will be worthy to take the scroll and open the seals as a

count down for the tribulation to begin. The raptured souls of all ages will be there in their glorified bodies to behold this great event. How do I know this? Read in context, "And they sang a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the scroll, and to open its seals; for thou was slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; And made us unto our God a kingdom of priests, and we shall reign on earth." Rev.5:9-10. This must take place before the kingdom of righteousness of the thousand years can be established upon the earth.

Another important revelation of the typical four living creatures is the pattern of thought as to the work of Christ. The Holy Spirit reveals the four aspects of Christ as portrayed in the four Gospels of the New Testament. These are displayed to Ezekiel chapter one verses 3 through 28 . "This was the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the Lord. And when I saw it, I fell upon my face, and I heard a voice of the one that spoke." Ezek.1:28b.

1. "The face of a Lion" = The kingly rule of Christ as described in the Book of Matthew.
2. "The face of an Ox" = The work of Christ as a servant, being described in the Book of Mark.
3. "The face of a Man" = Christ the Son of man as emphasized in the Book of Luke.
4. "The face of an Eagle" = Christ the Eternal Son of God. (John.20:31).

These cherubim and living creatures are among those created by Christ for a particular position before the glory of God. Satan as Lucifer had been granted the highest of responsibility among the angels, and was perfect until sin was found in his thoughts and deeds. God replaced him with the four living creatures who manifest the fullness of God's expression of life, full of activity in the presence of God's holiness, through their continual worship and guardianship before God. They are constantly ready to fulfill the commands of God, and continually see the glory of God. These all were created for the excellency of the Majesty on high. These guardians of God's holiness will continue throughout eternity to come, but with no threat of God's holiness being challenged. The newness of all things apart from sin will be a lasting condition in the new heavens and the new earth. (Dan.9:24).

b. SERAPHIM

The seraphim can be best understood from the revelation of the Holy Spirit to Isaiah. He saw in vision the Lord sitting upon his throne. "Above it stood the seraphim: each one had six wings; with two he covered his face, and with two he covered his feet, and with two he did fly. And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, is the Lord of hosts; the whole earth is full of his glory." Isa.6:2-3. This certainly indicates the purpose of their creation as worshipping, honoring and serving the Almighty God. Isaiah immediately saw his unworthiness to even fall before the throne of God. "Then said I, Woe is me! For I am undone, because I am a man of unclean lips, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips; for mine eyes have seen the King, the Lord of hosts." Isa.6:5. Since no one can see God the Father and live, this

had to be the Christ who is the King of kings and Lord of lords. (Rev.19:16.) No doubt at the immediate command of Christ upon the throne, one of the seraphim was told to take some coals from the burnt offering and made Isaiah a clean vessel, ready to receive the commission from the Lord. "Then flew one of the seraphim unto me, having a live coal in his hand, which he had taken with the tongs from off the altar. And he laid it upon my mouth, and said, Lo, this hath touched thy lips, and thine iniquity is taken away, and thy sin purged." Isa.6:6-7. God had used the Seraphim to prepare Isaiah for his great commission. "Also I heard the voice of the Lord, saying, Whom shall I send, and who will go for us? Then said I, Here am I; send me." Isa. 6:8. Did you note that the Triune God put forth the question? "Who will go for us"? This is but another evidence of the total involvement of the Godhead in so great a salvation.

The seraphim are of a unique creation among the angelic hosts and as the cherubim they worship in humility and serve in reverence, exalting the holiness of their Mighty God. The cherubim guard the holiness of the Godhead and demand altar sacrifice, while the seraphim demand cleansing through the laver for purification in the service of the Lord. As they were given the responsibility to prepare Isaiah through the cleansing coals of fire, so the Lord has provided for us the continual cleansing as we confess our sins by using the truth of 1 John 1:9. If we fail to continually confess our sins in this life, they will be as wood, hay, and stubble before the judgement seat of Christ. The most important phase of our confessing concerns those works of ours that have been done for personal gain and prestige here in this life. Get rid of this useless baggage, so that we do not land in heaven, "Saved, so as by fire". (1 Cor.3:15.)

c. MICHAEL THE ARCHANGEL

The creation of Michael the arch angel, as compared to Lucifer is a specially exalted angel and the mighty power reserved for him will be revealed, when he finally leads his army of angels to literally throw Satan and his demons out of heaven. (Rev. 9:1; Rev. 12:7-12.) Michael is considered as the great prince of the children of Israel. (Dan.12:1.) Since Michael is the prince of the children of Israel, he certainly would be an angel, active with the affairs of Israel from the very beginning. We read of Michael for the first time in the Book of Daniel. (Dan.10:1-21.) When he was created, he was given an outstanding name, "Michael" meaning, "Who is like God?" Although the sum total of his power and authority has not been revealed, we know that he will be given super power over Satan as he has him cast out of heaven forever. Michael disputed with Satan over the body of Moses, and could not bring accusation against him as recorded in Jude 9. There are but a few references to Michael the archangel, but it is a particular title given to him. When the rapture takes place, we will hear the voice of the archangel, as the dead in Christ rise first, and we who are alive shall be caught up together, to meet the Lord in the air. "For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first." 1 Thess.4:16.

d. GABRIEL

Here is one of the outstanding angels, with the gift of teaching God's word, having great knowledge of things to come. We do not have many references concerning Gabriel, but let it be

understood that he did more than blow a horn! God had revealed to him the great plan of God concerning the four great empires, Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greece, and Rome. He is God's supreme messenger of prophecies. (Dan.8:15-27; Dan. 9:20-27.) Gabriel presented the message of God for the ages to come, and revealed the exact time when Christ would be crucified. (Dan.9:26.) The heavenly angels must be aware of some of the events of the great Master Plan of God.

Another important revelation by Gabriel was the birth of the Christ child. (Lk.1:26-38.) God had Gabriel as a prepared vessel, sent forth in a moment to announce the arrival of the Messiah as a babe to be born in a manger. "And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel, (The mighty One from God) was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, to a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary. And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail, thou who art highly favored, the Lord is with thee; blessed art thou among women.And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS. He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest; and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father, David. And he shall reign over the house of Jacob forever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end. Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know no man? And the angel answered, and said unto her, The Holy Spirit shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee; therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God." Lk.1:26-35. With the information which Gabriel had to impart to Mary, it is clearly seen that the angels are aware of many phases of the mighty plan of God for all ages. Christ who is the Creator of all things, was also willing to humble himself and enter into the likeness of man which he has created.

e. LUCIFER

Lucifer, that mighty cherub of God as supreme among all of the angels of which we have record. He was perfect in all his ways when created and was full of all wisdom. There was nothing greater to be desired as a creature and was of a tremendous personality. For some of his characteristics, read carefully Ezekiel chapter 28:11-15. Lucifer was called the son of the morning and the prince of the power of the air. He was the guardian over the holy sphere of God. When sin was found within Lucifer he became an enemy of God, and became Satan, Serpent and the Devil. You may say, since God is omniscient, knowing everything, why then did God create Lucifer? You can ask the same question pertaining to Adam, or any of us for that matter. Christ could have created all of us creatures as robots, with a set pattern of thought and a given instinct as the animals, but he chose to give the angels and human beings a choice. This gave the angels and human beings the responsibility to make the choice. So Lucifer made the choice against God and drew with him one out of every three angels to serve him as their god.

Since God desires the very best for all of his faithful subjects, he is allowing sin to run its course. When the appointed time arrives, and the cup of iniquity is full, then the total sin will be cast into the lake of fire, never to appear again. Sin was judged at the cross and the choice is given to individuals to choose as to whom they will serve. "He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life; and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of

God abideth on him." Jn.3:36. When Christ makes all things new, then will come to pass the fulfillment of Daniel 9:24. Our prayer is, "Even so come Lord Jesus"!

f. ABADDON, APOLLYON, THE DESTROYER

This wicked angel is referred to both in the Hebrew language (Abaddon) and the Greek language (Apollyon) and translated "Destroyer". He evidently was created by Christ as a very powerful angel, controlling a whole army of angels. His wickedness was deferred, by being locked up in the bottomless pit with his great army of demons for thousands of years. His account has been recorded in Revelation chapter 9. He and his army of demons will be released when an angel from heaven gives Satan the key to unlock the bottomless pit so that he and his army can take part in the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel, and confirmed by Christ. (Dan.9:26-27; Matt.24:15.)

There are other imprisoned fallen angels, some until the final judgement (Jude 6.) and others like the demon Destroyer kept captive, until a given time. (Rev. 9:13-19.) All of these were removed from their creative place of authority, having joined Satan in his opposition to God. They were not deceived as man was, but clearly chose to oppose their maker.

g. MINISTERING ANGELS AND ELECT ANGELS

Angels in general are mentioned well over 200 times in the Bible and especially with great activities, as many of them never ceasing from worshipping Almighty God. This does not mean that they are enslaved in doing so, but rather having a continual attitude of praise to their Creator. "And the four living creatures had each of them six wings about him, and they were full of eyes within; and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, who was, and is, and is to come. And when those living creatures give glory and honor and thanks to him that is seated on the throne, who liveth forever and ever." Rev.4:8-9. All this praising of the Lord is sounded forth by all of the angels. "Praise ye the Lord, Praise ye the Lord from the heavens; praise him in the heights. Praise ye him, all his angels; praise ye him, all his hosts. Praise ye him, sun and moon; praise him, all ye stars of light. Praise him, ye heavens of heavens, and ye waters that are above the heavens. Let them praise the name of the Lord; for he commanded, and they were created. Her hath also established them forever and ever; he hath made a decree which shall not pass. " Ps.148:1-6.

The Lord Jesus Christ, having created the hosts of angels, is recognized by all the angels, and even the demons had to acknowledge this. (Lk.4:33-36; Mk.5:7.) "God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto nations, believed on in the world, received up into glory." 1 Tim.3:16b.

The term "Elect Angels" could apply to all of the faithful angels, under the blessings of their Creator. They have retained their status quo in which they were created. As the Holy Spirit spoke through Paul to Timothy, regarding the elders, this term of elected angels was used. "I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality." 1 Tim.5:21. The elect angels are acting as a witness, under God and the Lord Jesus Christ. The sovereign election of Almighty God has it's manifestation within the created angels. God in his omniscience is seen

in the very heavens and nothing has been done or ever will be, without the full knowledge of God. The obedient angels can be classified as the elect angels, and have been established forever in their glorified position. They have been sealed forever to the glory of God, and will never be tempted again, having past the test for eternity.

h. DESIGNATED ANGELS

As we study the Bible and many references to the angels, we discover that some angels have been designated through the service to which they are appointed. We learn to know of them through their activities, rather than their names. The Apocryphal mentions three angels by name which are not mentioned in the Bible. "Raphael", "Jeremiel", and "Uriel". However, we are primarily concerned as to what the Bible teaches, rather than writings which have not been included in the Bible.

Designated angels, although no specific name is given to them, are recognized by the work assigned to them. In the Old Testament, we read of "The Angel of the Lord", which usually refers to the Son of God. This is dealt with in chapter three. Let us name some of these designated angels with their reference in the Bible.

- 1. Two angels to Sodom to destroy it. (Gen.19:1.)**
- 2. The angel of the Lord before Abraham. (Gen. 22:11.)**
- 3. The angel of God called out to Hagar from heaven. (Gen.21:17.)**
- 4. The angels of God ascending and descending upon the ladder. (Gen.28:12.)**
- 5. The angels of God met Jacob. (Gen.32:1.)**
- 6. Jacob wrestles a man. (Gen.32:24-30.)**
- 7. The judgement of God against the first born in Egypt. (Exod.12:29-30.)**
- 8. The angel over Jerusalem. (2 Sam.24:16.)**
- 9. The angel of the Lord destroys the armies of the Assyrians. (2 Ki.19:35.)**
- 10. Thousands of angels. (Ps.68:17.)**
- 11. Special angels that came and ministered to Christ. (Matt.4:11.)**
- 12. Angels that shall reap the harvest of souls. (Matt.13:39.)**
- 13. Angels shall separate the wicked from the righteous. (Matt.13:49.)**

14. **Special angels for the children. (Matt.18:10.)**
15. **The elect of God shall be gathered together by angels. (Matt.24:31.)**
16. **The present angels of God are holy. (Matt.25:31.)**
17. **Jesus submitted himself to those who came to arrest him, but could have called forth more than 12 legions of angels if it was necessary. (Matt.26:53.)**
18. **Angels are in communication with the Lord. (Lk.12:8-9.)**
19. **Angels rejoice even when one sinner repents. (Lk.15:10.)**
20. **Angels for the carrying of the souls of men into the presence of God. (Lk.16:22.)**
21. **Angels presence at the tomb of Jesus. (Lk.24:23; Jn.20:12.)**
22. **Angels had a part in the giving of the law. (Acts 7:53; Gal.3:19.)**
23. **Angels designated to be present when the Lord comes to pour out his wrath upon the unregenerate. (2 Thess.1:7.)**
24. **Angels sometime appear as human beings. (Heb.13:2.)**
25. **Angels designated to safe guard churches. (Rev.1:20.)**
26. **There are four special angels to stand in four positions upon the earth during the tribulation. (Rev.7:1.)**
27. **A strong angel with a great voice before the throne of God. (Rev.5:2.)**
28. **Many angels around the throne of God. (Rev.5:11.)**
29. **Seven special angels to issue in the judgments with trumpets. (Rev.8:2.)**
30. **A mighty angel. (Rev.10:1.)**
31. **Angels with harps. (Rev.14:2.)**
32. **The angel with the everlasting Gospel. (Rev.14:6.)**
33. **Another angel with a great command. (Rev.14:15.)**
34. **Another angel to reap. (Rev.14:17-20.)**

35. **Seven angels with the seven plagues. (Rev.15:1 - 8.)**
36. **The angel that led the Apostle John with his vision of things to come. (Rev.17:7-18.)**
37. **Another angel with great power and made the earth bright with his glory. (Rev.18:1-3)**
38. **A mighty angel that will cast a great stone into the sea. (Rev.18:21.)**
39. **An angel to stand within the sun to report a great feast, when the wrath of God is poured out. (Rev.19:17.)**
40. **An angel to imprison Satan in the bottomless pit for the thousand years. (Rev.20:1-3.)**

B. THE FAITHFULNESS OF THE ANGELS

This gives us but a glimpse of the various designated angels that Christ created for time and eternity. It is also an indication that, as the angels differ in responsibility, so we will have different assignments when we receive our glorified bodies. That is why it is very important to us as Christians, dwelling upon this earth, not to be slothful in the work of the Lord. Our responsibilities during the kingdom of righteousness and on into eternity will be allocated to us before the judgement seat of Christ. (2 Cor. 5:10.)

The faithfulness of the angels is a tremendous discovery as revealed in the Bible. They have past the test through choice as to good and evil and have now entered into the impeccable right choice forever. Lucifer has led his pack of demons in his wicked way, through the wrong choice. He and the sum total of sin and death were judged at the cross, and the sum total of God's wrath upon them will be manifested in the "Lake of Fire" forever. As the faithful angels are sealed with the righteousness of God, so we are made new creatures in Christ Jesus and clothed in his righteousness forever and ever.

The Eternal Son of God, the Creator of all that exists, apart from God, has billions of faithful angels at his command. This was seen in the Old Testament as the angels often came to the rescue of the Old Testament Saints. God's armies of angels were sometimes used to destroy powerful armies against the children of Israel. Individual angels were faithful to their Creator as they ministered to the saints. God used the angels to be an assistance to the prophets of old.

Here are a few examples of the faithfulness of the angels found in the New Testament:

1. **An angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph. (Matt.1:19-21.)**
2. **An angel of the Lord warned Joseph of Herod's intentions. (Matt.2:13.)**
3. **Zacharias told that Elizabeth his wife would have a son to be called John. (by the name of Gabriel. Lk.1:11-20.)**

4. **The angel Gabriel went to Nazareth to reveal God's choice of the virgin Mary to bring forth the Christ child. (Lk.1:26-38.)**
5. **The angelic announcement of Jesus' birth to the shepherds, with a chorus of angels singing, "Glory to God in the highest". (Lk.2:8 - 14.)**
6. **The angels revealed the name "Jesus" before conception. (Lk.2:21.)**
7. **After the forty days of temptation to which Christ submitted himself, the angels came and ministered unto him. (Matt.4:11.)**
8. **The children's angels behold the face of God the Father. (Matt.18:10.)**
9. **More than twelve legions of angels were at Christ's command while on earth. (Matt.26:53.)**
10. **The angels of God are witnesses. (Lk.12:8-9.)**
11. **The angels are concerned about the salvation of souls. (Lk.15:10.)**
12. **The angels are faithful in leading the souls from the believers dead bodies into the heavenly abode. (Lk.16:22.)**
13. **The angels of the Lord were present at the resurrection of Jesus. (Lk.24:23.)**
14. **The angels were on duty in the empty tomb of Jesus. (Jn.20:11-13.)**
15. **The angels were faithful in presenting the law. (Acts 7:53; Gal.3:19.)**
16. **The seven angels that look after the true churches. (Rev.1:20.)**

As the angels of the Lord were faithful in the past, so God has recorded in the Bible, many activities of the angels in the present and future. The Lord Jesus Christ shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels. "And to you who are troubled, rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, in flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ; Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power. When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimony among you was believed) in that day." 2 Thess.1:7-10. One day we shall behold Jerusalem in the presence of the Lord and his innumerable angels. "But ye are come to Mount Zion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels, To the general assembly and church of the first born, who are written in heaven, and to God, the judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect, and

to Jesus, the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel." Heb. 12:22-24. We can rejoice that we are now not judged by the law, for Christ fulfilled the law for us and became our Mediator. The Creator of heaven and earth has become our Redeemer and Advocate before God the Father.

As one reads through the Book of the Revelation of Jesus Christ, we become aware of the great part that the faithful angels of the Lord will have in the final judgments in the last days. They are completely under the command of God, ready and willing to do of his good pleasure. May we as believers in the Lord Jesus Christ be willing to do of his good pleasure. The Lord has provided us with eternal life at a great cost to himself, suffering, bleeding and dying that we might have life everlasting. He is the great Creator of these marvelous angelic hosts, and has given them great power under his authority. The Word of God reveals the mighty works of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, that we might trust him, who is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we could ask or think. (Eph. 3:20-21.) We have everything to gain as we do his will, living well pleasing in his sight. "Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honor and glory forever and ever, Amen." 1 Tim. 1:17.

III. THE SIX DAYS OF CREATION UPON PLANET EARTH

INTRODUCTION

As we study the creation upon this planet earth, may we realize, as has been stated before that whatever God creates it is always good, and that is the way that God created the heavens and the earth. What happened to planet earth? The Bible, in a few brief statements reveals what had happened to the earth. In Isaiah 14:16-17. We read concerning Satan, "They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, Is this the man (the one) who made the earth to tremble, who did shake kingdoms, who made the world like a wilderness, and destroyed its cities, who opened not the house of his prisoners?" Something drastic occurred on the earth that it became waste and void. It is obvious that when Lucifer was removed from his most holy guardianship of God's borders in heaven, that he looked for a domain of his own. The earth was the most promising for the devil and his angels. Since Satan has declared himself the god of this world, he was responsible for bringing sin upon the face of the earth. God has declared that in the final judgement against Satan that he would cast him to the ground as is recorded in Ezekiel 28:16-19. "By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned; therefore, I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God, and will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty; thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness; I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee. Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy merchandise; therefore will I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee; it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee. All they that know thee among the people shall be appalled at thee; thou shalt be a terror, and never shalt thou be any more." The very ones that he has brain washed and deceived will see the hand of God upon him in final judgement.

So as we study the six day creation upon the earth, may we also realize that God in his omniscience was aware that this would happen before the foundation of the world. This six day creation is in effect, God's preparation for providing so great salvation for whosoever believes, but also the place where sin and death would be dealt with and destroyed forever and ever. (Dan.9:24.) It is very significant that in God's creation of the heavens and the earth, that he separates this tiny pin point of the earth from the rest of his domain. Why do you think that he has given this earth a special place in his creation? The planet earth is where God has passed his judgement upon the sum total of all sin. I do not understand how God could love us so, that he gave his Eternal Son for the propitiation of our sins, even while we were dead in trespasses and sins! The Bible declares this love of God which was shed abroad in our hearts. In God's special attention to this planet earth, he has accomplished some very important issues, which we will deal with as we explore the six day creation.

A DAY WITH GOD ALMIGHTY

Since the Bible considers the various time periods in God's classification of the meaning of "DAY", this needs to be explained as we consider the six day creation. "But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day" 2 Pet.3:8. What this statement declares to us is the fact that time is not the issue with God as to his eternal existence. However, for the sake of some who are confused about the time element in the six day creation in the Book of Genesis, let us consider the various usages in the Bible of the word, "DAY". There are four ways that the Scripture uses the word "DAY":

Twenty four hour day with the sun appearing upon the earth, dividing the light of the day from the darkness of the night.

1. **The light was called - "DAY TIME"**

The night was called - "NIGHT TIME"

2. **A period of twenty four hours - "DAY AND NIGHT"**

"And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night, and the evening and the morning were the first day." Gen.1:5. "And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days and years; And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so. And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, (Sun) and the lesser light to rule the night,(moon) he made the stars also. And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth, And to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good.: Gen.1:14-18. "Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world. But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him." Jn.11:9-10. "And after six days Jesus taketh Peter,

James, and John, his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain, privately." Matt.17:1. "But we hoped that it had been he who should have redeemed Israel; and besides all this, today is the third day since these things were done." Lk.24:21.

3. A period of time set apart for specific events

The various feasts of the Lord as he commanded Moses, were given as a series of days. "And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, saying, The fifteenth day of this seventh month shall be the feast of tabernacles for seven days unto the Lord." Lev.23:33-34. The feast of atonement, "And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, Also on the tenth day of this seventh month there shall be a day of atonement: it shall be an holy convocation unto you; and ye shall afflict your souls, and offer an offering made by fire unto the Lord.....It shall be unto you a sabbath of rest, and ye shall afflict your souls. In the ninth day of the month at evening, from evening unto evening, shall ye celebrate your sabbath." Lev.23:26-32. The feast of the Passover. "And this day shall be unto you for a memorial; and ye shall keep it a feast to the Lord throughout your generations; ye shall keep it a feast by an ordinance forever. Seven days shall ye eat unleaven bread; even the first day ye shall put away leaven out of your houses; for whosoever eateth leavened bread from the first until the seventh day, that soul shall be cut off from Israel." Ex.12:14-15.

4. A period of time such as an age, or completion of events as creation or special promises to be fulfilled at a definite time.

A good example of this is the time in ages past when the Lord made the heavens and the earth. "These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the Lord God made the earth and the heavens." Gen.2:4. The statement made in 2 Peter chapter three verse ten. "But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat; the earth also, and the works that are in it, shall be burned up," This certainly shows a time period may be of great length involving certain events. God's timing, allows a sequence of preliminaries, and then his day is timed exactly according to his sovereignty. The Rapture is being timed according to the completion of the body of Christ. When the last member of the body of Christ is harvested, then that trumpet will sound and the dead in Christ will rise first, then we who remain will be changed and caught up to meet the Lord in the air.

A. THE TIME PERIOD INVOLVED IN THE SIX DAY CREATION.

If we accept any other time period for this six day creation than six 24 hour periods, we display ignorance of life upon this earth. We also will have to reject the six days of a working week and 24 hours for the sabbath. The creation upon the earth of vegetation, and animal life would be in jeopardy if each development had to wait a long period of time before they would have access to food. You may have heard the question asked, "Which came first, the chicken or the egg"? There is no question about it that God had to create the chicken before there was the possibility of eggs to be hatched. Some of these liberals argue that God set forth a

progressive development over a long period of time, which has been called Christian evolution. This is neither Christian or according to God's Word. Each of God's creations was created in a full maturity, ready to multiply, "after it's kind".

It took but a day to clear the sky of it's density and let the light shine through. This became the division of day and night upon the earth, which involved a total of 24 hours. The Bible clearly states that the evening and the morning were the first day. As we review the total creation within the six twenty four hour periods, may we be aware that the six day creation was interwoven and interdependent for the survival of life.

B. GOD'S LIGHT BREAKS THROUGH THE DARKNESS.

Without light the six day creation could not have developed. God placed the distance of the sun from the earth exactly in the right position and now we are able to view the days of creation productively. There was no lucky chance in God's creation, but everything according to the will of God.

DAY ONE

"And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day." Gen.1:3-5. The sun was created prior to this six day earthly creation, and this first day allowed it to penetrate the earth in preparation for growth of life of all sorts. Light utilizes life and causes it to be fruitful.

DAY TWO

"And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters. And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so. And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day." Gen.1:6-8. These first two days are of great importance, preceding the creation of life upon the earth. We also must remember that the earth was dependent upon this vapor from the heavens to give moisture to life, as there was no rain until the flood. "For the Lord God had not caused it to rain upon the earth, and there was not a man to till the ground." Gen.2:5 b. There were streams of water upon the ground and vapor above. This preparation for the creation of life was essential and God made everything ready for creation. Who was declaring these things to come to pass? The Eternal Son of God, even the Lord Jesus Christ. "All things were made by him; and without him was not anything made that was made." Jn.1:3.

This division of the waters or vapor in the heavens and water upon the earth, also would have prepared the earth for God's undertaking on the third day, involving streams, rivers, lakes, and oceans. What God can do with but his Word is beyond our understanding or comprehension. God doesn't need to wait for full development, but His Word is sufficient and it is so! What ever happened, when God divided the moisture, we have a sequence of events in preparation for life.

DAY THREE

"And God said, Let the waters under heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear: and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called he Seas: and God saw that it was good." Gen.1:9-10. Now that there was a separation of water and dry land throughout the earth, Elohim is ready for creating living vegetation throughout the earth. "And God said, Let the earth bring forth vegetation, and herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after its kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so. And the earth brought forth vegetation, and herb yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after its kind: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the third day." Gen.1:11-13. Immediately there was grass seeding off, fruit trees bearing fruit, with the earth completely covered. Until now there were no seasons, but all vegetation, fruits and seeds were developed by God's Word. God's perfect creation brought forth perfect fruition.

DAY FOUR

And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years;" Gen.1:14. This is an amazing declaration from the Lord, as he now sets the earth's time machine. The day and night were established by the period of light and darkness. "And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give lights upon the earth: and it was so." Gen.1:15. From the next statement the sun, the moon and the stars are activated upon the earth. Could it be that at this stage in creation that the heavenly bodies surrounding the earth were created? It certainly appears to be so. "And God made two great lights the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth, And to rule over day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the fourth day." Gen.1:16-19. God had established evening and morning prior to this, in his creation, but now he sets the exact time in the sky by the light of the sun and moon. This is all in preparation and creation of the animal life, which will follow. There will be no problem for food as it was prepared prior to animal life.

DAY FIVE

The fifth day begins with the filling of the sea and streams, rivers and lakes with living creatures, both small and great, completely mature and ready to multiply, according to its kind. This included the fowl of the air, which immediately could live off of the creatures created within the water. "And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that has life, and fowl that may fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven. And God created great sea monsters, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after its kind: and God saw that it was good. And God blessed them, saying, Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let fowl multiply in the earth. And the evening and the morning were the fifth day."

Gen.1:21-23. God gave the first start of life to be multiplied, by creating mature creatures immediately and in one day, whether it took him 12 hours or 24 hours. God could do it all in seconds if he had desired to do so.

DAY SIX

This is one of the most important days in the creation by the Lord. The scene is set for the multitude of animals to be created, but most of all the appearance of man in the image of God. "And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after its kind, cattle, the creeping thing, and beast of the earth after its kind: And it was so. And God made the beast of the earth after its kind, and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth after its kind: and God saw that it was good." Gen.1:24-25. These two verses of Scripture take in billions of creatures, and each in its own order, "After its kind". This gives no room for any evolvment whatsoever! However, this does not exclude varieties within the family group, such as the various kinds of dogs, cats, cattle, horses and the like. Another important factor in God's creation, he did not name the many animals, but gave that responsibility to the first man Adam. Gen.2:20. The first appearance of man upon the scene was with a very high intelligence. God was the schoolmaster and taught man to read and write, otherwise Enoch could never have given us the writings found in the Book of Jude. (Jude 14-15.)

MAN BECOMES GOD'S UNIQUE CREATION

And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness; and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created him; male and female created he them." Gen.1:26-27. This is an overall statement of the creation of man, but what made him different from all other creation? We must see what the Bible says. "And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul." Gen.2:7. Another great difference that man was from all animals, was the special creation of Eve, his wife. "And the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam and he slept: and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; And the rib, which the Lord God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man." Gen.2:21-22. Why didn't the Lord God create a man and woman separately? Here are some very important factors to consider.

1. The first Adam made responsible for the whole race.

There had to be but one responsible for the destiny of mankind and therefore the Lord placed all responsibility upon the first Adam. When sin occurred, the total of all human flesh became totally depraved.

2. The second Adam, the Lord Jesus Christ in the flesh made available salvation.

When the second Adam, the Lord Jesus Christ died on the cross, he died for the sins of the total race of all people, that whosoever believeth receives eternal life, and whosoever does not believe has not everlasting life, but receives an everlasting living death. (Jn.3:18, & 36.)

3. One person was made as the head of the human race and to have dominion over all the earth, with God's blessing and responsibility.

"And the Lord God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed. And out of the ground made the Lord God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil.....And the Lord God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to till it and to keep it." Gen.2:8-15.

4. Adam as head of the race was under God's command.

"And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat; But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it; for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die." Gen.2:16-17.

5. Christ the second Adam was under command of God the Father.

Making Adam responsible, as the head of the human race, was of great importance as the Eternal Son of God entered this world under the command and authority of God the Father. It was indeed very necessary that the second Adam took the responsibility to provide salvation for all who would believe in him as their personal Savior. "And so it is written, The first man, Adam, was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a life-giving spirit. However, that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. The first man is of the earth, earthy; the second man is the Lord from heaven. As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy; and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly." 1 Cor.15:45-49.

6. Man given the supreme place upon Planet Earth, "Under God".

One of the great differences between animals and man, is between instinct and choice. Animals were given an instinct and God created them adapted to their environment, they having no choice in the matter. However, with man, God gave him choice and the possibility of various developments, as we are aware of in our civilization. We also see the independence that man has with this choice and must make a decision as to whether he wants to be under God or not. God has given to depraved man a multitude of powers, which are in the majority of cases misused and corrupted. Due to this depraved nature the longevity of early man and our present man differ greatly. The natural man likes to think of himself as highly superior to early man, and even has him evolving from animals. It is because he rejects what the Bible says. "All flesh

is not the same flesh, but there is one kind of flesh of men, and another flesh of beasts, another of fish, and another of birds." 1 Cor.15:39.

As to the natural man's viewpoint of the early man living in caves and finally progressing, with the building of dwellings, they have the process in reverse rather than the degrading of the generations from Adam. Which of the most intelligent of the intelligent could do what God gave Adam to do? "And out of the ground the Lord God formed every beast of the field, and every fowl of the air; and brought them unto Adam to see what he would call them: and whatsoever Adam called every living creature, that was the name thereof. And Adam gave names to all cattle, and to the fowl of the air, and to every beast of the field;" Gen.2:19-20 a. Even if the most intelligent man could give names to every creature,(but he can't) he still could not even retain the names of all these animals which would number in the tens of thousands. Adam was able to converse with God in a language he received directly from God. Adam's school of understanding came directly from his Creator. Language was no problem, when God created Adam, for that too was given to him by the Eternal Son of God. Where did the original languages come from? They came when Almighty God separated the people into nations and languages at the tower of Babel. (Gen.11:1-9.) The oldest record that we have of the beginning of a written language was during the seventh generation from Adam. "And Enoch walked with God after he begot Methuselah three hundred years and begot sons and daughters. And all the days of Enoch were three hundred and sixty five years. And Enoch walked with God, and he was not; for God took him." Gen.5:21-24. "And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord, cometh with ten thousands of his saints, To execute judgement upon all, and to convict all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him." Jude 14,15. Just who of the Godhead did Enoch walk with? The same one of whom he prophesied would come with countless number of his saints in judgement. He could be none other than the Lord Jesus Christ. What a privilege both Adam and Enoch had to walk with the Eternal Son of God, the Creator of Heaven and Earth.

CONCLUSION OF THE SIX DAY CREATION

God's creation within the heavens, and the restoration of the earth, creating the fish, the animals, the birds, and mankind, ended with the unique creation of mankind in God's own image. "Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it, because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made. These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the Lord God made the earth and the heavens, and every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew; for the Lord God had not caused it to rain upon the earth, and there was not a man to till the ground. But there went up a midst from the earth, and watered the whole face of the ground." Gen.21-6. This gives us an over all picture of God's creation. God eventually passes on the seventh day or sabbath during the time of the Mosaic laws. The 24 hour of the Sabbath, given to Moses is identical with the 24 hour period that God rested on the

seventh day, after the six days of creation. God does not depend upon time in his work or activity to accomplish his will, but merely needs to say the word if he so wills and it is done.

IV. THE CREATION OF NEW CREATURES IN CHRIST JESUS

INTRODUCTION

The first Adam, who was created in the image of God, fell into sin and brought total depravity upon all of his posterity. The second Adam from heaven, being very God brought newness of life to all who believed. This was prophesied in Joel 2:28-29. "And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my Spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions; And also, upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out my Spirit." Joel 2:28-29. The first that we learn about this new creation of the Lord Jesus Christ, by a new birth, is found in the third chapter of John. "Jesus answered, and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God." Jn.3:3. This is God's way of providing the divine spark to the future bride of Christ. We become a new creation with the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit.

A. THE CREATION OF NEW LIFE.

"For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive; but every man in his own order: Christ the first fruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming." 1 Cor.15:21-23. We come into this earthly life dead spiritually and dying physically. God the Father has sent his eternal Son into the world to make possible newness of life. "As newborn babes, desire the pure milk of the Word, that ye may grow by it," 1 Pet.2:2. This newness of life must be fed the Word of God to develop and mature. Being born of the Holy Spirit, we have within us the unction of the Holy Spirit, who will help us to grow in the knowledge and power of the Lord Jesus Christ.

This becomes a new and living way, rather than the old condemned way, "Dead in trespasses and sins". The precious blood of the Lord Jesus Christ has made this possible. "Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, by a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh, and having an high priest over the house of God." Heb.10:19-21. The Lord Jesus Christ the Creator of heaven and earth has purchased us out of the slave market of sin and brought us into the mansions of the Heavenly Father. Christ made possible the out pouring of God the Holy Spirit, bringing this newness of life, to all who believe. The old adamic nature remains with us until death, and it becomes a constant spiritual battle to keep the old carnal nature under control. Such a battle would be impossible to stand against the world, the flesh and the devil, were it not for the indwelling and help of God the Holy Spirit. "Therefore, if any man be in Christ, he is a new creation; old things are passed away; behold all things are become new." 2 Cor.5:17. We must constantly reckon the old nature dead and alive unto God, growing in the nurture and admonition from the Word of God. May we give all praise and glory to the Lord, and not be boastful or proud. "But God forbid that I should glory, except in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by

whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world. For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature." Gal.6:14-15. Being a new creation in Christ Jesus, we are admonished to keep under subjection the old nature, so that the new nature might live an exalted life unto the Lord. "That ye put off concerning the former manner of life the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts, and be renewed in the spirit of your mind; And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness." Eph.4:22-24. How is this possible? "Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world." 1 Jn.4:4.

B. ANTICIPATION TO RECEIVE OUR GLORIFIED BODIES

All believers are considered as Saints, because of the finished work of the Lord Jesus Christ. However, no believer has ever attained sinless perfection in this earthly life. The battle between the flesh and the spirit continues until we leave this world for Paradise. The world, the flesh and the devil will be left behind, as we remain in the presence of the Lord. One day that trumpet will sound, and the Saints of all ages will be alerted and made ready to return with the Lord of glory. "For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the arch angel, and with the trump of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first; Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air; and so shall we ever be with the Lord." 1 Thess.4:16-17. This will be a marvelous revelation as all the dead in Christ return with the Lord, receiving their bodily identification, so that they are known eternally as a particular individual, and then we that are alive shall be changed! What does that mean? It means that we all at that moment will receive a glorified body like unto the body of the Lord. "Beloved, now are we the children of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be, but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him for we shall see him as he is." 1 Jn.3:2. From this point onward, sin will never be a problem to those who will be changed. What a day of rejoicing that will be! Of course we still will have to come before the Judgement seat of Christ, to receive our rewards, according to our faithfulness upon this earth, but sin will never be the issue again, in our eternal life, as we enjoy the presence of the Lord Jesus Christ forever and ever. God the Father has given all authority to his Eternal Son, and you and I as believers become joint heirs with him, by the grace of God.

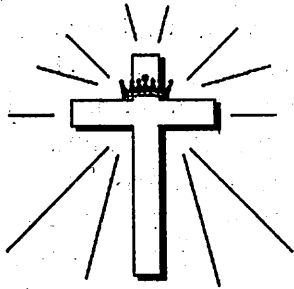
CHAPTER TWO

QUESTIONS

1. **What do you understand by Genesis 1:26? Explain the plural word for God. "Elohim"**
2. **Was the Triune God involved in creation? Explain also John 1:1-3; Explain the unity in the Godhead.**
3. **Why do you believe that Christ was not created, but always existed?**
4. **Write briefly on Psalm 19:1-10; Isaiah 40:13-14.**
5. **Explain why Genesis 1:1. gives us the separation of the creation of the earth from the vast heavenly creation.**
6. **The evolutionists claim that things just developed without a Creator by a gradual evolvement. If that were so, how would it be possible for each star and heavenly body to stay in the right position, the right timing, the right direction and the right movement, so exact that the mariners can detect exactly where they are on the open seas? Write briefly on "God the Creator of all things".**
7. **When God first created the earth, do you believe that it was waste and void? What happened upon this earth according to Isaiah 14:16-17; Ezekiel 28:16-18; Genesis 1:2a?**
8. **Since the heathen believe that there must be a supreme and great God, why do they not worship him?**
9. **Write briefly as to the number of different heavens that exist.**
10. **Give in writing some of Christ's teachings on the kingdom of heaven. Scripture please.**
11. **Why could Christ teach so much about heaven?**
12. **Explain 1 Kings 8:27.**
13. **Give a brief account of Psalm 74:12-17.**
14. **Where did satan establish his headquarters when he sinned against God? (2 Cor.4:3-4; Job.1:7; 1 Peter 5:8.)**

15. **Explain Psalm 89:11; and Psalm 98:2.**
16. **Write briefly on the subject, "God is Mindful of this Earth".**
17. **Where will the final battle be fought against Satan and his fallen angels? Give Scripture.**
18. **Where will the sum total of sin spend eternity? Scripture please.**
19. **Give seven types of angels and their names.**
20. **Explain the four faces which Ezekiel saw during his vision at the river Chebar. (Ezekiel 1:3-28.)**
21. **Name 10 designated angels and their mission, citing Scripture.**
22. **Write briefly on, "The Faithfulness of the Angels in the Old Testament". Cite Scripture.**
23. **Write briefly on, "The Faithfulness of the Angels in the New Testament", with Scripture.**
24. **Why do we believe in a literal 6 days of creation on planet earth?**
25. **Explain the various uses of the word, "Day".**
26. **What is the importance of the first four day creative preparations before the birds, the fish, the animals and man were created?**
27. **Why was man God's unique creation?**
28. **Write briefly on the difference between first Adam and second Adam. Scripture please.**
29. **Why was it necessary to have but Adam created and his wife Eve, created from Adam's rib?**
30. **Write briefly on, "God's New Creation in Christ Jesus".**

CHAPTER THREE



Christ in the Old Testament

CHAPTER THREE
CHRIST
OF THE OLD TESTAMENT

INTRODUCTION

In the Old Testament for obvious reasons there are various usages of the various words for God. There are both singular and plural pronouncements of the Most high God. The study of these various names of the Godhead would be a complete study in themselves. However as this study has to do with Christ of the Old Testament, we will deal mainly and directly with references to Christ, the Eternal Son of God. Christ is represented as the Eternal Son of God in the word "Elohim" which is the plural form of the noun for God, but is singular in meaning as a perfect unity. When the word "El" appears it refers to the singular for God, with reference to one of the particular personalities in the Godhead. Then we have the word "Jehovah", referring to the eternal existence of the Triune God. There are countless names also referring to God's various attributes. Let us concentrate on these three names in order to give us the assurance that the Old Testament clearly states the plural personality of the Godhead, yet three equal individual personalities. In the Jewish confessional of faith, Deuteronomy chapter six and verse four to nine and Deuteronomy eleven, verses thirteen to twenty one, and Numbers fifteen, and verses thirty seven to forty one are quoted in the Jewish religion. These are to declare that Judaism is a monotheistic religion. We thoroughly agree to such a statement as Christians. "For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus." 1 Tim.2:5. In this study, we will search through the Old Testament for evidence of the existence of three persons in one God, with the purpose of showing the eternal existence of Christ as the Son of God. God had promised in the very name "Immanuel" that God would be with men. Christ, before the foundation of the world, had a body ready for that hypostatic union, the incarnation, which became the physical manifestation of God. (Theophany)

OUTLINE

- I. CHRIST THE CREATOR.**
- II. CHRIST THE SEED OF THE VIRGIN.**
- III. CHRIST THE PROVIDING ROCK AND CRUSHING STONE.**
- IV. CHRIST THE PROMISED MESSIAH.**
- V. CHRIST THE KING OF KINGS.**

I. CHRIST THE CREATOR.

In the creation of this vast universe, there had to be someone who was capable of a perfect and orderly creation. That someone was God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit. Their existence had to be without beginning or without ending. "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God". Jn.1:1-2. There is no question in my mind as to the Lord Jesus Christ always existing with God the Father. Christ is the Word, as declared and all things were made by him. "All things were made by him and without him was not anything made." Jn.1:3. As Adam was made in the likeness and image of God, it was through Christ that this came about. It was the Lord Jesus Christ who took man and placed him in the beautiful garden of Eden to look after it as well as enjoy it. (Gen.2:15,16.) It was Christ who walked with Adam in the cool of the evening, in this garden. Eventually when Adam and Eve sinned, it was Christ who had to seek Adam and Eve, reprove them, clothe them and drive them out of the garden. The Eternal Son of God has been declared by the Scripture that he is the Creator of all things, whether directly or indirectly, therefore he had to exist before creation began.

We have already reviewed the fact that Christ is the express image of God the Father, and those that have seen Christ, have seen the Father. We have evidence of this great power which belongs to Christ. He has been given all power and authority from God the Father. "All authority is given unto me in heaven and in earth." Matt.28:18b. Since Christ is the Creator of all things, we today can say, having been made new creatures in Christ Jesus. "Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creation; old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new." 2 Cor.5:17. Christ in his great creative power, makes new creatures out of all who will put their trust in him. "Wherefore, come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, and will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty." 2 Cor.6:17-18. One of the outstanding declarations from Christ himself is found in John 8:1-58. Read it and study that portion of God's Word very carefully.

II. CHRIST THE SEED OF THE VIRGIN.

The Master Plan of the Triune God was thoroughly agreed upon, before the foundation of the world, and so as Adam and Eve had judgement passed upon them, so the plan of deliverance was also revealed. "And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; he shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel" Gen.3:15. Since it was the woman that Satan deceived, so it would be through her that the virgin birth would occur in this world, to deal with the sin question. Such a statement from Almighty God, didn't seem to bother Satan very much, as he could brain wash every human being coming into this world. His first attempt, after the fall of man was with Cain, and it worked. Abel who was obedient to God in sacrificing to cover his sins, was removed, and Cain became a fugitive. (Gen.4:13-14.) The Lord in his grace, set a mark on Cain, what ever that may have been, we do not know. Instead of Cain returning to the Lord, we read, "And Cain went out from the

presence of the Lord" Gen.4:16 a. The Cainite civilization became very wicked, as we read such words from Lamech,"And Lamech said unto his wives, Adah and Zillah, Hear my voice; ye wives of Lamech, hearken unto my speech; for I have slain a man who wounded me, and a young man for hurting me. If Cain shall be avenged sevenfold, truly Lamech seventy and sevenfold." Gen.4:23-24. This is certainly early evidence in the generations of man, to the total depravity of man. Satan thought he had all things under his control, and with his tremendous power, he thought that the conflict with God through mankind would be very simple to control. He did think that if he had the power to brain wash man, then the seed of the woman would be no problem. The ways of God are beyond satanic control and our human understanding. God's ways are beyond all creative knowledge and are able to bring the wrath of man to naught, and exalt His marvelous Name.

As sin multiplied and the demonic world was infiltrating into God's creation, our Creator had to bring the flood, saving but eight souls. The great decree that God had uttered, seemed to be of no avail. BUT GOD, in his omniscience was aware of the situations as well as his unchanging declarations. Since time is no issue with God, he waited for the fullness of time, to gather a chosen race of people, under Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, to give their 12 tribes a very important sign. "Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, the virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel." Isa.7:14. This was a very specific sign, of a very specific virgin. Never before was a virgin capable of bearing a son. This son, to be born, would be of the royal family of king David and would someday rule and reign upon this earth. The prophet Isaiah is given that all important news of the coming King of kings and Lord of lords. "For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given, and the government shall be upon his shoulder; and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The Mighty God, The Everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with justice and with righteousness from henceforth even forever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this." Isa.9:6-7

Now as we look back and read this great proclamation and understand the fullness of the predictions by God, we realize that it was confusing to Israel, as they faced captivity and enslavement, from every direction. They were utterly disturbed, because so many of them, from the leaders on down, were going in "The Way of Cain". Their sacrifices meant nothing but a routine, rather than a reality. Their hearts and lives had gone after false gods, and had to be judged. But God was faithful to the remnant of the Old Testament Saints and what he promised would come to pass. Israel sought a limited deliverance from their enemies, but God was preparing for a complete destruction of total sin, and remove it from his domain forever and ever. "The Seed" of the woman, the Lord Jesus Christ, entered this world to become the Redeemer of all who would believe, in His death upon the cross. "For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures;" 1 Cor.15:3-4.

THE REDEEMER IN PROPHECY.

Only God could provide so great salvation, at such a great cost! The very words that the Lord Jesus Christ would speak, while hanging on the cross were recorded centuries before, as revealed to king David. "My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? Why art thou so far from helping me, and from the words of my roaring?" Ps.22:1. As sin bearer upon the cross, God the Father had to turn away from his Eternal Son, as he bore the sins of the whole world. "And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, la'ma sabach'thani? That is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?" Matt.27:46. Since Christ bore the sins of the whole world, so the issue is no longer the sin question, but rather the Son question.

The Old Testament gives us various portraits of the Messiah and I would like to list some of them for your study in depth. The Lord Jesus Christ had to be the Eternal Son of God, since all things were created by him, and nothing exists except what he created, being from everlasting to everlasting. This is a very important issue to be remembered, as one studies the Biblical truth of the Godhead. In studying the Old Testament references, concerning the Eternal Son of God, may we carefully take special note of his many appearances. Also may we remember that those who have seen God the Son, have seen God the Father. "No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, who is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him." Jn.1:18. "He that hath seen me hath seen the Father;" Jn.14:9b.

THE LIVING MESSIAH IN THE OLD TESTAMENT.

- 1. Christ in the Godhead of all creation. (Gen.1:1; Jn.1:3.)**
- 2. Christ was responsible for man, becoming "A living soul". (Gen.2:7.)**
- 3. Christ walked with Enoch for many years. (Gen.5:21-24; Heb.11:5-6.)**
- 4. Christ prepared the garden of Eden as the first farmer. (Gen.2:8-9.)**
- 5. Christ made an Edemic covenant with first man. (Gen.2:15-17.)**
- 6. Christ walked in the garden in the cool of the day with Adam and Eve. (Gen.3:8.)**
- 7. Christ put a curse upon "The way of Cain". (Gen.4:9-15.)**
- 8. Christ provided the grace in saving Noah and seven of his family from the flood. (Gen.6:8; Heb.11:7.)**
- 9. Christ the founder of the many languages at the tower of Babel.(Gen.11:1-9.)**

10. Christ called Abram to protect the Messianic hope. (Gen.12:1-9; Heb.11:8-19; Heb.11:8-19; Gen.17:1-3.) Abraham meets with Melchizedek, Christ as king priest of Salem. (Gen.14:17-20;Heb.7:1-22;) Christ was represented among the three men who approached Abraham's tent. (Gen.18:1-5.)
11. Christ wrestled with Jacob and changed his name to Israel. (Gen.32:24-29;)
12. Christ protected Joseph and made the great nation Israel in the land of Egypt. (Gen.39:1-49:33.)
13. Christ revealed himself to Moses from the burning bush. (Ex.3:1-10; Heb.11:24-29.)
14. Christ was the Rock from which the water freely flowed. (Ex.17:1-7; 1 Cor. 10:1-4.)
15. Christ was at Mt. Sinai and talked with Moses, giving the ten commandments. (Ex.1-8.)
16. Christ showed Moses all of the promised land. (Deut.34:1-4.)
17. Joshua speaks with Christ, the Divine Captain. (Josh.5:13-15.)
18. Christ the Lord speaks to Samuel. (1 Sam.16:1-3.)
19. Christ the Lord speaks with David. (2 Sam.5:19.)
20. Christ speaks with Solomon. (1 Ki.3:11-14; 1 Ki.9:1-9.)
21. Christ speaks and protects Elijah. (1 Ki.17:2-5.)
22. Christ and Isaiah the prophet had many words together. (2 Ki.19:6-7,20. 2 Ki.20:5-6.)
23. Christ answers Job out of a whirlwind. (Job 38:1-41; Job 39:1-30; Job.40:1-24; Job 41:1-34;Job.42:7-8.)
24. The Eternal Son of God portrayed in his crucifixion. (Ps.22:1-31; Isa.53:1-12.)
25. Jeremiah heard the word from Christ. (Jer.2:1-37; Jer.3:1-4:31.)
26. Ezekiel commissioned by Christ. (Ezek.2:1-8:18.)

We could go through the complete Old Testament, which reveals the contacts that the Son of the Most High God had with the prophets, kings and priests. Of course the name of the Lord Jesus Christ is not mentioned, but there could be no other person in the Godhead to be seen. No

man hath seen God the Father at any time, therefore we have the Eternal Son of God to reveal him to us. "No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, who is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him." Jn.1:18. This applies to all times in the history of man. God the eternal Son has declared God the Father to us, for he is the very image of God the Father,

The Old Testament saints as well as the New Testament saints which have gone into glory, are in the presence of the Eternal Son of God. The Messiah who walked the roads of the Middle East is the same Eternal God who witnessed to many prophets, priests and kings in the Old Testament times. As the Old Testament saints looked forward to the coming of the Messiah as prophet, priest and king, so we look back to that finished work on Calvary, that made all of this possible. It will be a glorious day when we all see Jesus Christ, face to face, and receive our glorified bodies, fashioned in the likeness of the Eternal Son of God. Those scars in his hands, and feet, with the pierced side, will be the most precious sight in heaven! It will always remind us of the great price that Almighty God paid in order that we might have our sins forgiven and enjoy eternal life in that perfect new creation, free from the presence of sin forever!

III. CHRIST THE PROVIDING ROCK AND CRUSHING STONE.

THE ROCK

It is marvelous to see how God the Holy Spirit reveals the Lord Jesus Christ as "The Rock". As the children of Israel wondered through the wilderness for the forty years, Christ was their water supply. Moses was informed by God to strike "The Rock" once at the beginning of their journey through the wilderness and from there on Moses was merely to speak to the rock. It may seem strange to some of you that God refused to allow Moses to go into the promised land because he later on struck "The Rock" twice and became angry. "And the Lord spoke unto Moses, saying, Take the rod, and gather thou the assembly together, thou, and Aaron, thy brother, and speak ye unto "The Rock" before their eyes; and it shall give forth its water, and thou shalt bring forth to them water out of "The Rock" so thou shalt give the congregation and their beasts drink. And Moses took the rod from before the Lord, as he commanded him. And Moses and Aaron gathered the congregation together before "The Rock". and he said unto them, Hear now, ye rebels; must we fetch you water out of this rock? And Moses lifted up his hand, and with his rod he smote "The Rock" twice; and the water came out abundantly, and the congregation drank, and their beasts also. And the Lord spoke unto Moses and Aaron, Because ye believed me not, to sanctify me in the eyes of the children of Israel, therefore ye shall not bring this congregation into the land which I have given them." Num.20:7-12. Both Moses and Aaron were punished for disobeying the command of God. This was not an ordinary rock, but rather "The Rock" Christ Jesus who is the water of life. "But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst, but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life." Jn.4:14.

Here is a lesson that we all should learn, and that is obedience to God, regardless of the situation. Moses had struck "The Rock", prior to this at God's command. "Behold, I will stand before thee there upon "The Rock" in Horeb; and thou shalt smite The Rock, and there shall

come water out of it, that the people may drink. And Moses did so in the sight of the elders of Israel." Ex.17:6. This was not to be repeated again, as an illustration concerning the Lord Jesus Christ suffering once upon the cross. "So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many, and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation." Heb.9:28. "He is The Rock, his work is perfect; for all his ways are justice; a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he." Deut.32:4. There is nothing or no one that can be compared to our Triune God! "There is none holy like the Lord; for there is none beside thee, neither is there any rock like our God." 1 Sam.2:2.

God the Holy Spirit has used the symbol of "The Rock" both in the Old Testament and the New Testament. We are firmly established upon The Rock, Christ Jesus. He is The Rock of our salvation. David's song of deliverance describes the source of his strength. "The Lord liveth; and blessed be my Rock, and exalted be the God of The Rock of my salvation." 2 Sam.22:47. "And he said, The Lord is my Rock, and my fortress, and my Deliverer. The God of my Rock, in him will I trust; he is my shield, and the horn of my salvation, my high tower, and my refuge, my Savior; thou savest me from violence. I will call on the Lord, who is worthy to be praised; so shall I be saved from mine enemies." 2 Sam.22:2-4. King David also realized that the Lord was The Rock of Israel. "The God of Israel said, The Rock of Israel spoke to me, He who ruleth over men must be just, ruling in the fear of God." 2 Sam.23:3. These clear references can only refer to the Eternal Son of God. David also realized that he was utterly dependent upon the Lord the solid Rock. "'Unto thee will I cry, O Lord my Rock, be not silent to me, lest, if thou be silent to me, I become like those who go down into the pit." Ps.28:1. "For thou art my Rock and my fortress; therefore, for thy name's sake lead me and guide me." Ps.31:3.

To confirm what is written in the Old Testament, let us see what is written by the Holy Spirit in the New Testament. The Lord Jesus Christ emphasized this during his first advent into this world. "Therefore, whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, who built his house upon a rock." Matt.7:24. "He saith unto them, But who say ye that I am? And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jo'na; for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father, who is in heaven. And I say unto thee, Thou art Peter (Petros, a stone), and upon this Rock (A massive rock) I will build my church, and the gates of hades shall not prevail against it." Matt.16:15-18. (Mk.8:27-30; Lk.9:18-21;)

We also have direct reference to the Old Testament and Israel wondering in the wilderness. "Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea, and were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; And did all eat the same spiritual food; And did all drink the same spiritual drink; for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them, and that Rock was Christ." 1 Cor.10:1-4.

THE STONE

These symbols of both "The Rock" and "The Stone" are very important issues in understanding the workings of our Almighty God. The building of the various altars with stones was of great significance in the Old Testament. Also the erection of stones at the Jordan river

was also important. Jacob as he slept at a place called Bethel and realized that God was there, also made use of stones as a pillar unto God. "And Jacob rose up early in the morning, and took the stone that he had put for his pillows, and set it up for a pillar, and poured oil upon the top of it.....And this stone, which I have set for a pillar, shall be God's house: and of all that thou shalt give me I will surely give the tenth unto thee." Gen.28:18-22. When Jacob returned to Bethel, he remembered his vow before God. "And Jacob set up a pillar in the place where he talked with God, even a pillar of stone: and he poured a drink offering on it, and he poured oil thereon." Gen.35:14.

The prediction that Jacob declared as for Joseph is very enlightening. "Joseph is a fruitful bough, even a fruitful bough by a well, whose branches run over the wall. The archers have harassed him, and shot at him, and hated him; But his bow abode in strength, and the arms of his hands were made strong by the hands of the Mighty God of Jacob (from there is the shepherd, The Stone of Israel,") Gen.49:22-24. It is of the greatest interest to relate the work of the shepherd as to "The Stone" of Israel. Israel was commanded to make an altar of stone for the Lord. "And if thou wilt make me an altar of stone, thou shalt not build it of hewn stone; for if thou lift up thy tool upon it, thou hast polluted it." Exod.20:25. God requires perfect righteousness and that can only be attained by the grace of God, not of works, lest man should be boastful as to what he can do.

Joshua placed stones in the Jordan as well as stones on land, it is of great importance for us to study the use of stones in the Bible. "And Joshua made a covenant with the people that day, and set them a statute and an ordinance in Shechem. And Joshua wrote these words in the book of the law of God, and took A Great Stone, and set it up there under an oak that was by the sanctuary of the Lord. And Joshua said unto all the people, Behold, This Stone shall be a witness unto us; for it hath heard all the words of the Lord which he spoke unto us: it shall be, therefore, a witness unto you, lest you deny your God." Josh.24:25-27. This was a witness to the fact that Israel vowed to put away all foreign gods and only worship the Lord. Samuel used the stone as a testimony to God who delivered Israel from the Philistines. "Then Samuel took a Stone, and set it between Mizpah and Shen, and called the name of it Eben-ezer, saying, Hitherto hath the Lord helped us." 1 Sam.7:12.

Let us consider briefly the revelation that God gave to Daniel. Let us consider the dream of Nebuchadnezzar. There was one outstanding revelation that took place through his dream. That great dream of the four supreme empires, Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greece, and Rome, would all be destroyed by the Lord Jesus Christ as a Stone eternal that should crush to pieces all of these great kingdoms. "And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed; and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever. Forasmuch as thou sawest that The Stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it broke in pieces the iron, the bronze, the clay, the silver, and the gold, the great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter; and the dream is certain, and the interpretation of it sure." Dan.2:44-45. This great Stone can only refer to The Eternal Son of God, who will eventually destroy the revived Roman Empire. (Rev.19:11-21.) God's wrath against all evil will be poured out, and nothing shall stand in the way of God.

THE CORNER STONE

The Lord spoke very directly to Job, declaring himself before all creation and answers to no one. "Where wast thou when I laid the foundation of the earth? Declare, if thou hast understanding. Who hath laid the measures of it, if thou knowest? Or who hath stretched the line upon it? Whereupon are its foundations fastened? Or who laid its corner stone, when the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for Joy?" Job 38:4-7. This had to be the Creator talking to Job, who is none other but the Lord Jesus Christ. (Jn.1:3.)

This brings us to another important factor and that is, "Christ is the cornerstone"! "I will praise thee; for thou hast heard me, and art become my salvation. The Stone which the builders refused is become the head of the corner. This is the Lord's doing; it is marvelous in our eyes." Ps.118:21-23. The builders of Israel (The Scribes, Pharisees, the Sadducees) rejected the Messiah of Israel, the Lord Jesus Christ. They planned his death, but were unaware that God in his omniscience knew exactly what they would do. "The Stone which the builders refused is become the head of the corner. This is the Lord's doing; it is marvelous in our eyes." Ps.118:22-23. The Bible also records that this very same Stone became a stumbling stone to those false religious leaders down through the ages. "For the Lord spoke thus to me with a strong hand, and instructed me that I shouldn't walk in the way of this people, saying, Say ye not, A confederacy, to all them to whom this people shall say, A confederacy; neither fear ye their fear, nor be afraid. Sanctify the Lord of hosts himself, and let him be your fear, and let him be your dread. And he shall be for a sanctuary; but for a Stone of stumbling and for a Rock of offense to both the houses of Israel, for a trap and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem." Isa.8:11-14. The nation Israel has made many confederacies down through the years, especially with Syria and Egypt but all in vain. Even to this day there is an attempt to establish A Confederacy with the neighboring Arab nations which will all fail. Why? Because the leaders of Israel have rejected The Corner Stone, even the Lord Jesus Christ. Jerusalem has become a great issue in the battle for control, and Satan is doing all he can to prevent it from being totally in the hands of the nation Israel. The Bible predicted that this would happen, only as under God's sovereignty." Behold, I will make Jerusalem a cup of trembling unto all the peoples round about, when they shall be in siege both against Judah and against Jerusalem. And in that day will I make Jerusalem a burdensome stone for all peoples; all that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces, though all the nations of the earth be gathered together against it." Zech.12:2-3.

Regardless of what the nations try to legislate for Jerusalem and the nation Israel, God will have the last word. "Therefore thus saith the Lord God, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a Stone, a Tested Stone, a precious Cornerstone, a sure foundation; he that believeth shall not make haste." Isa.28:16. This revelation to Isaiah the prophet is of great and mighty significance. Regardless of the outcome of these negotiations that will take place during our present day, the Lord will bring to pass his Master plan of all ages! The Bible declares, "For, behold, The Stone that I have laid before Joshua; upon One Stone shall be seven eyes; behold, I will engrave the engraving of it, saith the Lord of hosts, and I will remove the iniquity of that land in one day. In that day, saith the Lord of hosts, shall ye call every man his neighbor under the vine and under the fig tree." Zech.3:9-10. This can only refer to the time when the Lord sets up his kingdom of righteousness upon this planet earth.

To verify and confirm these various references to The Stone, the Lord himself spoke concerning these things during his earthly ministry. "Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The Stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner; this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes? Therefore I say unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits of it. And whosoever shall fall on This Stone shall be broken, but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder. And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spoke of them. But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they regarded him as a prophet." Matt.21:42-46. (Mk.12:10; Lk.20:17-18;) The Lord Jesus Christ is that solid Rock and corner Stone for the saints of all ages. "He is despised and rejected of men, a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief, and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not. Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows; yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. He was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement for our peace was upon him, and with his stripes we are healed.....Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong, because he hath poured out his soul unto death; and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bore the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors." Isa.53:3-12.

IV. CHRIST THE PROMISED MESSIAH.

The Triune God in their omniscience, knew exactly what would be necessary to defeat the satanic power of all ages, and bring the final judgement upon sin and death at the cross. The Triune God also has a definite time for enacting the final and Divine penalty upon sin and death. An incarnate body was prepared before the foundation of the world to make the condemnation and final dealing with evil, once and forever. God's purpose by sending His Eternal Son to the cross was not merely to bring redemption to all who believe, but also to eradicate the possibility of sin from God's creation forever and ever! (Daniel 9:24.)

- 1. To finish the transgression.**
- 2. To make an end of all sins.**
- 3. To make reconciliation for iniquity.**
- 4. To bring in everlasting righteousness.**
- 5. To seal up all visions and prophecies.**
- 6. To anoint the most Holy One.**

Since there was no atonement for the fallen angels, who were not deceived but rather chose to follow Lucifer, sin had to be dealt with in another way. The way chosen by the Godhead was through "Homo Sapien". The Triune God chose to breath upon the man of clay

and he became a living soul. "And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness; and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God made man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them." Gen.1:26-27.

Sin first began in heaven by Lucifer the chiefest of all Cherubim, when he willed to establish his own dynasty of angels apart from God. Being the great Cherub, with the highest position in heaven, he had tremendous influence over the billions of angels. Here is what the Holy Spirit revealed to Ezekiel in the land of Babylon, concerning Lucifer.- Ezek.28:12-15. May we ponder for a moment upon this mighty Cherub of all of the angelic hosts. Also may we remember that his position has been filled by four other cherubim, but his power under the sovereignty of God has not been taken away from him.

THAT MIGHTY CHERUB CALLED LUCIFER

- 1. Full of wisdom.**
- 2. Perfect in beauty.**
- 3. He had trespassed into the Garden of Eden.**
- 4. Of great value in precious stone.**
- 5. A marvelous voice and personality.**
- 6. The anointed Cherub.**
- 7. A special covering upon the Holy Mountain of God.**
- 8. Tremendous power to walk among the stones of fire.**
- 9. He was absolutely perfect when God created him.**

If Lucifer, called Satan, the Devil and the serpent, is to be dealt with, he must be struck down by Almighty God. His sins are many and some of them are mentioned in Isaiah 14:12-17. Here he has declared himself independent from God, desiring to set up his own domain apart from God and in opposition to God. This battle and warfare between good and evil, right and wrong, holiness and unholiness began in heaven. One third of all of the billions of angels rebelled against God and joined the evil forces. (Rev.12:4.) This demanded from the Triune God an established opposition under the Divine authority. We do not know what barriers and controls that God has established in heaven, but we do have sufficient evidence in the Bible of God's dealing with these evil powers. However, God waited until sin was introduced to planet earth before he allowed his plans to be made known. God knows every thought and intent of all of the evil forces from the very beginning of time. His Master plan has been established with the

approval of God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit. The Eternal Son of God was chosen to be the Deliverer and Messiah who would enter this planet in the form of a human being. Satan deceived Eve and Adam sinned through his disobedience to his Creator. The challenge by the Creator was announced. "And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; he shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel." Gen.3:15. The seed of the woman, rather than the seed of the man, required the seed of a virgin. The Lord Jesus Christ presented a sign of just how he would take upon himself a form of man to combat sin. "Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, the virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel." Isa.7:14. This promise of the Incarnate Messiah has been a great preparation and well established in the Master Plan of God. Remembering that the seed of the woman required a virgin and a sign required something different from a natural birth to be a sign. "For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given, and the government shall be upon his shoulder; and his name shall be called **Wonderful, Counselor, The Mighty God, The Everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace**. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with justice and with righteousness from henceforth even forever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this." Isa.9:6-7.

As you study the Old Testament, there are many references of the coming Messiah, without using the exact wording. Abraham was promised a Divine city come down from God. This would infer that he was promised a deliverer. (Gen.15:1-18; Gen.17:1-13; Gen.12:1-9; Heb.11:8-10.) David was promised never to lack for a son to sit upon his throne. (1 Chron.17:11-13; 2 Sam.7:16,24; 1 Ki.8:23; 1 Ki.9:5.)

THE MESSIAH WILL ESTABLISH THE KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS.

"And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots; And the Spirit of the Lord shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord, And shall make him of quick understanding in the fear of the Lord; and he shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of his ears. But with righteousness shall he judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth; and he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breadth of his lips shall he slay the wicked." Isa.11:1-4. This of course refers to the thousand year reign of the Lord Jesus Christ upon planet earth. The remainder of this chapter in Isaiah deals with the total restoration of the earth from the curse, and even the animals will be at peace one with the other during this reign of the Messiah.

THE MESSIAH WILL RESTORE RIGHTEOUSNESS UPON THE EARTH.

There will be great restoration when the Messiah separates the sheep from the goats, as he will establish his kingdom upon this earth. "When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory. And before him shall be gathered all nations; and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats." Matt.25:31-32. "In that day shall this song be sung in the

land of Judah: We have a strong city; salvation will God appoint for walls and bulwarks. Open ye the gates, that the righteous nation that keepeth the truth may enter in. Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on thee, because he trusteth in thee. Trust ye in the Lord forever; for in the Lord God is everlasting strength." Isa.26:1-4. "For behold, the Lord cometh out of his place to punish the inhabitants of the earth for their iniquity; the earth also shall disclose her blood, and shall no more cover her slain." Isa.26:21.

THE REJECTED MESSIAH BECOMES THE ACCEPTED SAVIOR.

The conflict of the ages between right and wrong shall continue until the final judgement day at the great white throne of the Messiah. As the holy angels made the right choice of obedience to God, so Christ has provided for saints of God to enter into his eternal kingdom. This was all made possible when Christ went to the cross to remove the sin barrier. The old rugged cross was the primary destination of the Messiah to defeat Satan and bring in the final judgement against sin and death. "But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement for our peace was upon him, and with his stripes we are healed." Isa.53:5. "The Lord hath made bare his holy arm in the eyes of all the nations, and all the ends of the earth shall see the salvation of our God." Isa.52:10. "But be glad and rejoice forever in that which I create; for, behold, I create Jerusalem a rejoicing, and her people a joy. And I will rejoice in Jerusalem, and joy in my people; and the voice of weeping shall be no more heard in her, nor the voice of crying." Isa.65:18-19.

JOHN THE BAPTIST BECOMES THE SPIRIT OF ELIJAH.

"Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, saith your God. Speak ye tenderly to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned; for she hath received of the Lord's hand double for all her sins. The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make straight in the desert a highway for our God." Isa.40:1-3. God in his omniscience did not send Elijah to herald the Messiah, for he knew that his Eternal Son would be rejected and the kingdom would be postponed. This rejection of the Messiah has been foretold several times in the Old Testament. "Thus saith the Lord, the Redeemer of Israel, and his Holy One, to him whom man despiseth, to him whom the nation abhorreth, to a servant of rulers; Kings shall see and arise, princes also shall worship, because of the Lord who is faithful, and the Holy One of Israel, and he shall choose thee." Isa.49:7.

All of these references are very important and helpful to our understanding the two phases of the coming of the Lord into this world. Those rulers of Israel were without excuse as to the true Messiah. The Lord Jesus Christ fulfilled every detail as to his lineage and place of coming into this world. "But thou, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel, whose goings forth have been from old, from everlasting." Micah 5:2.

ELIJAH WILL COME TO HERALD THE KINGDOM.

God's word will stand the test of time and never needs to be altered. God's Master Plan remains constant and absolute! Yes, the Word does declare that Elijah will come to herald the King of kings and Lord of lords as predicted. "Behold, I will send you Elijah, the prophet, before the coming of the great and terrible day of the Lord;" Malachi 4:5. This is why the rulers of Israel questioned John the Baptist as to whether he was Elijah. He admitted that he was not Elijah, and the Lord declared John the Baptist as the spirit of Elijah. Did God send the wrong man? No, God sent a substitute to Israel, because he knew that they would reject the Messiah. Even John the Baptist, when he landed in prison, sent his disciples to Jesus to ask him if he really was the Messiah. (Matt.11:1-5.) The Lord sent back an answer. "The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them." Matt.11:5.

In order to trace the coming of Elijah before the millennium kingdom you must search the Scripture and events which occur before the kingdom is set up. "And I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and threescore days, clothed in sackcloth. These are the two olive trees, and the two lampstands standing before the God of the earth. And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies; and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed. These have power to shut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy; and have power over waters to turn them to blood, and smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will." Rev.11:3-6. There is no question about their identity as being Elijah and Moses. These two men were also present for the transfiguration of the Lord before Peter, James and John. Matt.17:1-8.

Elijah will come before the Kingdom of righteousness is set up upon the earth. He will herald the Lord Jesus Christ during the great tribulation for a period of three and one half years. This will be in the days of the Abomination of Desolation spoken of by Daniel and confirmed by the Lord. Immediately after the tribulation the Lord will come down to establish his kingdom with a rod of iron. (Rev. 19:11-21).

V. CHRIST THE KING OF KINGS.

The ministry of the Eternal Son of God in this world of mankind has been very specific. Being the Creator of all things both in heaven, and the earth as well as the giver of life to all that exists, Christ becomes deeply involved with all existence. Israel demanded an earthly king like the heathen nations and God reluctantly gave to them kings. However, in the great Master Plan of God, provision was made that eventually all mankind would acknowledge the King of kings, and Lord of lords, through the genealogy of Shem, the name of Abraham, the tribe of Judah, and the roots of Jesse. King David was chosen to carry the birth right and provide the channel through which the Eternal Son of God would enter planet earth. "But my mercy shall not depart away from him, (David), as I took it from Saul, whom I put away before thee. And thine house and thy kingdom shall be established forever before thee; thy throne shall be established forever." 2 Sam.7:17. David's kingdom would be established forever, which is very important for us to remember. The only way that this kingdom could be established forever, would be by God himself. This would also necessitate an eternal people to be ruled by an

Eternal king. "For thou hast confirmed to thyself thy people, Israel, to be a people unto thee forever; and thou, Lord, art become their God." 2 Sam.7:24. "And it shall come to pass, when thy days are ended, that thou must go to be with thy fathers, that I will raise up thy seed after thee, who shall be of thy sons; and I will establish his kingdom. He shall build me an house, and I will establish his throne forever." 1 Chron.17:11-12. "Then I will establish the throne of thy kingdom upon Israel forever, as I promised to David, thy father, saying, There shall not fail thee a man upon the throne of Israel." 1 Ki.9:5.

It is certainly confirmed in the Bible that Christ, the Eternal Son of God is the only one available for the fulfilling of this promise. Christ was declared "The King of the Jews", as he hung upon the cross. This kingdom of Israel has been established forever and ever, with the very Eternal Son of God as their king. He has already be heralded as the coming King to rule and to reign upon this earth, by John the Baptist. He became "The Lamb of God", which taketh away the sins of the whole world. This has made possible a kingdom of righteousness, which God alone will establish upon the earth, with Jerusalem as the capital of the world. Yes, Christ was rejected, as God predicted, but God's promise remains the same, and in the fullness of time, God will send forth his Son to establish the kingdom of righteousness. Elijah will come and herald this kingdom, (Rev.11:3-14.) and the Lord himself will descend from heaven in mighty power and defeat the enemies and usher in the kingdom of righteousness. (Rev. 19:11-21.) "And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, King of kings, and Lord of lords." Rev.19:16.

It is absolutely amazing what God has planned for those of his creation, who will accept his plan of salvation. We already have the guarantee that we are the children of the royal family of God, by the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit. Everything that we need, to see us through this pilgrimage of life, can be attained through the indwelling of the Holy Spirit. The Old Testament saints did not have the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, but they did have their sacrifices as a means of covering their sins. That glorious day when Christ will rapture all the saints into heaven, providing them with a glorious body for eternity, will bring to pass, that new heart which they have been promised. We of the New Testament saints will receive the glorified body, like unto the Lord's. For almost two thousand years, the Lord has been preparing us a place in the mansions of the Father, as his future bride. The Old Testament saints will be present and will be invited to that great event, when we are presented to God the Father, and united in a heavenly marriage with the Lord Jesus Christ. This will be one of the greatest events to take place in heaven as the angelic hosts behold in great wonder. There will be great choirs singing forth the praise to God, with glory to God in the highest.

THE BATTLE OF ARMAGEDDON.

This great ingathering of the saints of God will sing forth in mighty power, praises to the King Immanuel! Great preparations will be made by God for our return to earth after the great tribulation, so that the King of kings, and Lord of lords can take over the rule upon planet earth. We will behold the Eternal Son of God, going forth to battle, and defeat the evil forces and establish his kingdom of righteousness throughout the whole world. Those great sermons on the mount, the beatitudes, and all the kingdom teachings will be activated upon this earth in the power of God. It is therefore very important that we study our Bible as workmen that do not

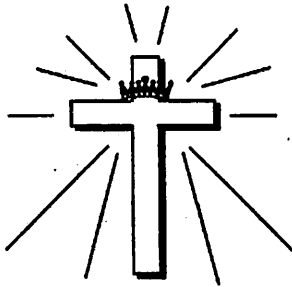
need to be ashamed. As we are faithful in this present life, so we will be useful to the Lord during the kingdom age. God the Holy Spirit dwells within every believer and desires to help us with special gifts, as well as lead and direct us into all truth. Allow the Holy Spirit to fill your life with eternal spiritual food from the Word of God. Give of your best to the Master, the Lord Jesus Christ! "Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Spirit, which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ, our Savior. That, being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life." Titus 3:5-7.

QUESTIONS CHAPTER THREE

- 1. Why is it important to identify Christ in the Old Testament? Give Scripture.**
- 2. Explain the difference between Monotheism and the plurality of gods.**
- 3. Explain the eternal existence of Christ as Creator of all things.**
- 4. Why is the "Virgin Birth" necessary for redemption?**
- 5. Write briefly on the Redeemer in prophecy. Cite Scripture.**
- 6. Give seven approaches of the Eternal Son of God found in the Old Testament, as he revealed himself to mankind.**
- 7. What identification is related to Melchizedek, without a beginning or an ending? Genesis 14:17-20; Hebrews 7:1-22.**
- 8. Who is typified with water from "The Rock" in the wilderness? Explain.**
- 9. Give Biblical illustrations of "The Stone".**
- 10. Give Biblical illustrations of "The Corner Stone".**
- 11. What was the purpose of a sacrificial Messiah offered to mankind? Cite Scripture.**
- 12. Give the description of Lucifer before and after his sin. How did he cause the necessity of a Divine sacrifice? Use Scripture.**
- 13. Give Scripture references of a promise of a Savior.**
- 14. What will the Messiah establish upon this planet earth? Scripture please.**
- 15. What will the Messiah restore upon this planet earth? Scripture please.**

- 16. How did God know that His Eternal Son, "The Messiah", would be rejected of men? Give Scripture.**
- 17. When will Elijah be sent to herald the king and kingdom of God?**
- 18. Give Old Testament Scripture as to Christ the Eternal king.**
- 19. Describe "The Battle of Armageddon. When shall it take place? Give Scripture.**
- 20. Do we have sufficient evidence that Christ existed during the Old Testament times? Give Scripture.**

CHAPTER FOUR



**Christ
the
Incarnate One**

CHAPTER FOUR

CHRIST

THE INCARNATE ONE

INTRODUCTION

"Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver and gold, from your vain manner of life received by tradition from your fathers, But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot, who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you."
1 Pet.1:18-20.

The Eternal Son of God, being the Creator of all things and being the second person in the Trinity had a prepared body like unto ours before the foundation of the world. Of course this body of Christ was without sin and incapable of ever sinning, being the Incarnate body of Deity. Man was made in the likeness and image of the Godhead, which gives us a tremendous position and relationship. "And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness; and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them." Gen.1:26-27. This is a far cry from the evolvement of man from the animal world! Since The Lord Jesus Christ is the Creator of all things, that human perfect and sinless body existed before the foundations of the world.

OUTLINE

- I. THE ONLY BEGOTTEN BECOMES THE SEED OF THE WOMAN.**
 - II. THE INCARNATE CHRIST NECESSARY FOR ATONEMENT.**
 - III. THE INCARNATE NECESSARY FOR REDEMPTION.**
 - IV. THE INCARNATE KING REJECTED OF MEN.**
 - V. THE COMMISSIONING BY THE INCARNATE CHRIST.**
-

I. THE ONLY BEGOTTEN BECOMES THE SEED OF THE WOMAN.

THE PLANET EARTH BECOMES THE BATTLEGROUND.

In the Master plan of God before time existed, the Triune God desired to settle the sin question before it existed, and "Homo-Sapien" would be the instrument through which sin would be dealt with once and forever. In God's omniscience "The Seed Of The Woman" would be the means through which sin would be dealt with once and forever. The angelic hosts would see the mighty creation of God, and when tempted, they would have a choice of obedience to God or allegiance to Lucifer. Their choice was made with the fullest understanding of who was sovereign and righteous, and who was rebellious and desirous of power. Lucifer was the greatest of angels and was honored with the highest respect. He convinced one angel out of every three angels to follow him, with the desire to set up a new empire on planet earth. This was obvious in the earth becoming a corrupt and void planet. BUT GOD, was the only one who could hinder this or destroy the rebelling fallen angels. The Master Plan demanded the destruction of all evil forces by "The Seed of The Woman". This would seem to be an act of weakness, but on the contrary it manifested the mighty power of God.

There is no salvation for the fallen angels, as they were not deceived into sinning against God and thus, were without deliverance. God used the weakness of the human being to manifest his mighty power in making possible the eradication of sin from God's creation forever. (Dan.9:24.) "And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; he shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel." Gen.3:15. This battle was so set that there would be a confrontation between "The Seed Of the Woman" and the seed of Satan (The unregenerate human beings and the demons). It may have seemed like an easy matter for Satan to get the victory, for he had power to brain wash every human being coming into this world. (2 Cor.4:4.) This could have been accomplished in Noah's time as the whole world seemed to be under the spell of the satanic realm. "But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord." Gen.6:8. God intervened with the plans of Satan and chose a family of eight to preserve that special "Seed of the Woman".

THE INCARNATE LINEAGE.

When Christ gave the ultimatum to Satan for causing Eve to sin and be disobedient to God, Satan thought he could avoid being bruised in the head by the seed of the woman. Satan's method was to infiltrate and brain wash all human beings, thinking that would prevent the seed of the woman from his personal destruction. Had God not preserved a Messianic lineage, that may have been possible. A natural human being is always inferior to the power of Satan and would not have been able to confront the wiles of the devil. The Eternal Son of God had to enter this world as impeccable and without the sin nature. This could only be possible through the seed of the woman having a conception by God the Holy Spirit. A virgin had to be the instrument through which the Eternal Son of God would be capable of becoming the sacrifice for the sins of the whole world. "Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, "The Virgin" shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel." Isa.7:14. In order for this to be a sign, it could not be a mere young woman, but required a

virgin and her seed through which the Messiah would come. This could not be an ordinary child from the seed of a man, for such a one would be totally depraved and would die in his own sins. Therefore, it would require the very eternal God to enter this world as the Savior. For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given, and the government shall be upon his shoulder; and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The Mighty God. The Everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with justice and with righteousness from henceforth even forever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform it." Isa.9:6-7. When God makes a statement as to future events, he is always sure and accurate, "Thus saith the Lord".

THE PRESERVATION OF THE MESSIANIC LINEAGE.

Throughout the Old Testament, under Judaism, there was a constant expectation of the coming of the Messiah and king from the tribe of Judah, and the lineage of king David. This was an unconditional covenant made by God with king David. (1 Chron.17:11-13; 2 Sam.7:16; 1 Ki.8:23.) This lineage was all but destroyed by evil forces, BUT GOD, had promised, "The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform it". The following are but a few of the methods that the evil forces used in attempting to destroy this important lineage through which the coming of the Incarnate and Eternal Son of God would enter this world.

1. **The substitute of Hagar in an attempt to divide with a bond woman. (Gen.21:10-13; Gen.25:5; Gal.4:19-31.)**
2. **The attempted curse against Israel. (Num.22:1-23:30; 2 Pet.2:15; Rev.2:14.)**
3. **Moses interceded for Israel 40 days and 40 nights. (Deut.9:18.)**
4. **The multitude of enemies against Israel as they entered the promised land for the kingdom to be set up. (Deut.20:4; Josh.5:13-15.)**
5. **The preservation of the Messianic lineage by kinsman - redeemer. (The Book of Ruth. 1 Sam.2:10.)**
6. **The countless drifting into sin of the nation Israel. (1 Sam.7:4-8; 1 Sam.8:4-9; 1 Sam.8:19-22.)**
7. **Satan used king Saul to attempt to destroy David. (1 Sam.19:1-31:13.)**
8. **David's great sin. (2 Sam.11:1-27.)**
9. **King David's lineage kept through king Solomon. (2 Sam.12:24; 1 Ki.1:2:1-12.)**
10. **Israel rebelled against the house of David. (1 Ki.12:19.)**

11. **The true prophets of God rejected by Israel. (Throughout the whole Bible)**
12. **The preservation of the Tribe of Judah.(The Book of Esther.)**
13. **The opposition to the rebuilding of Jerusalem. (Ezra, and Nehemiah.)**
14. **The rebellion of the nations. (Ps.2.)**
15. **The attempt to destroy Jesus as a child by Herod. (Matt.2:13-18.)**

These are but a few of the many attempts to destroy "The Seed Of The Woman", BUT GOD in his sovereignty and fore-knowledge will always have the way of escape or necessary protection of his every promise. We can take great courage in the wonder working power of Almighty God. We are in the midst of this warfare of Satan as he tries to destroy every promise of God. God's Word remains forever and ever, in spite of all opposition! Satan knows how to deceive with his deceitful counterfeits, BUT GOD, sets forth the truth in no uncertain terms. We can rely upon every promise that Almighty God makes. God is the sum total of veracity and there is no shadow of turning with our everlasting God.

A GREAT PROPHET KING AND PRIEST.

As Enoch declared in writing, being the seventh generation from Adam, that the Lord would come to rule and reign upon this earth with tens of thousands of his saints,(Jude 14-15.), so this preparation for the Incarnate Eternal Son of God, was fore-ordained from ages past by the Triune God. "The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken,.....And the Lord said unto me,.....I will raise up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth, and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him. And it shall come to pass, that whosoever will not hearken unto my words which he shall speak in my name, I will require it of him." Deut.18:15-19. "For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me." Jn.17:8.

As we have seen in Isaiah 9:6-7; the various names of the Incarnate Eternal Son of God, it is significant that the Lord Jesus Christ has many names, for just one name could not express all of the mighty character of the Eternal Son of God. It was as Manoah prayed to God, he desired to be taught by God's servant, and surprisingly, God sent his angel to her. "And Manoah said unto the angel of the Lord, What is thy name, that when thy sayings come to pass, we may do thee honor? And the angel of the Lord said unto him, Why askest thou thus after my name, seeing it is "Wonderful"? Jud.13:17-18.

This great Prophet, King, and Priest, had to be of a special order for coming into this world. To be a king as well as a priest, there had to be some other means of qualifying than either of the tribe of Judah, or the tribe of Levi. We find our answer as always from the Word of God. "For this Melchizedek, king of Salem, priest of the Most High God, who met Abraham

returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him, to whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all; first being, by interpretation, King of righteousness, and after that also King of salem, which is, King of peace; without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days nor end of life, but made like unto the Son of God, abideth a priest continually." Heb.7:1-3. This was none other than the Lord Jesus Christ, the Eternal Son of God, living and ruling in the days of Abraham. We need no greater evidence than this of the eternal state of the Incarnate Son of God. (Heb.7:4-22.)

II. THE INCARNATE CHRIST NECESSARY FOR ATONEMENT.

In order to restore mankind into fellowship with Almighty God, the sin barrier had to be removed. "For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ, our Lord." Rom.6:23. God cannot have fellowship with sinners, unless there is some way of removing the sin barrier. If this can be accomplished, then the gift of eternal life with God can be accomplished. Since "Homo - Sapien" is totally depraved, then he needed a substitute to pay the debt of sin, and that was met through the Incarnate Eternal Son of God who had such a body apart from sin. He was willing to take our place of condemnation, dying in our stead. Since death could not hold the Eternal Son of God, Christ became victor over sin and death and made possible the restoration of fellowship with God, making atonement for our sins in his own perfect and sinless body. "There is therefore, now no condemnation to them who are in Christ Jesus." Rom.8:1a. Our gracious Triune God, gave the Adamic race their likeness and image, that through the Incarnate Christ, we might have atonement made for those who would believe, giving them eternal life, dwelling in the presence of God forever and ever. The salvation, redemption and atonement which God offers is entirely based upon Divine provision. "Forasmuch, then, as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves likewise with the same mind; for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin, that he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh, to the lusts of men, but to the will of God." 1 Pet.4:1-2. "Blessed be God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who, according to his abundant mercy, hath begotten us again unto a living hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time." 1 Pet.1:3-5.

Christ the Eternal, Incarnate Son of God the Father is the only possible one by which we can establish peace and tranquillity with God. Since there was a debt to be paid in the flesh, Christ took upon himself the form of man in order to fulfill the requirements of the eternal laws of God. It took the grace of God to perform this. "For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous. Moreover, the law entered, that the offense might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound; That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ, our Lord." Rom.5:19-21. "For he hath made him, who knew no sin, to be sin for us, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him." 2 Cor.5:21. This was something that Satan could not understand that God would be willing to become the atonement for sin. "For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things,

in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings." Heb.2:10.

III. THE INCARNATE NECESSARY FOR REDEMPTION.

"For as much as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver and gold, from your vain manner of life received by tradition from your fathers, but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot, who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifested in these last times for you, who by him do believe in God, who raised him up from the dead and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God." 1 Pet.1:18-21.

Although flesh and blood cannot inherit eternal life, yet it took flesh and blood, prepared by Almighty God, to redeem those who were under the curse of sin in the flesh, and make possible a sinless life forever in the presence of God. Mankind became living souls, but under the curse of sin and death. This was imputed to man through the fall of first Adam, but redeemed from the curse by the second Adam, even the Lord Jesus Christ. God in his foreknowledge was prepared with so great salvation. "So, when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, who giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ." 1 Cor.54-57. "And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a grain of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone; but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit. He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal." Jn.12:24-25. "I am the good shepherd; the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep..... I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine. As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father; and I lay down my life for the sheep. And other sheep I have, that are not of this fold; them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd. Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again. No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father." Jn.10:11-18.

The Creator of heaven and earth prepared a physical body before time began for this very purpose of redeeming, "Whosoever Believeth", paying the penalty of sin, and judging sin in the flesh, once and forever. This was an important part in the Master plan of God to judge all sin and justify many, removing the possibility of sin ever entering into his new creation. "For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true, but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us; Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others; For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world. But now once, in the end of the ages, hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself." Heb.9:24-26. Christ cannot be crucified again, under any circumstance.

IV. THE INCARNATE KING REJECTED OF MEN.

God had predicted that the Eternal Son of God would be rejected, coming as the Incarnate One. This is clearly stated in Isaiah. "He is despised and rejected of men, a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief, and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not." Isa.53:3. As also was mentioned, God supplied a substitute for Elijah who is to herald the King of kings, and Lord of lords. Because of this terrible rejection by Israel, they have been scattered to the ends of the earth, persecuted and destroyed. Their greatest punishment of all ages will be forth coming, when they are regathered in their own land. This final judgement will take place after the saints of all ages will be raptured, out from the wrath to come. (1 Thess.1:10.)

It is amazing that Christ would be rejected of men, as he did great miracles in their sight for those three years of public ministry. It only reminds us again and again of the great power of persuasion that Satan has over natural man. Although Satan is under the sovereignty of God, yet he has great power in brainwashing every soul coming into this world. (2 Cor.4:4.) In every generation from the appearing of the Incarnate one, until now and on through the Millennium, there will be the majority of human beings rejecting the Incarnate Son of God. With all of the evidence and the witnesses to the Lord, yet the hardness of the heart of man refuses the love of the Incarnate Son of God. Israel has led the way in this great rejection and that is why she will get her final punishment during the great tribulation. She has already suffered much during those many years of being scattered among the nations of the world, but the greatest will be the Abomination of Desolation during the tribulation. (Matt.24:15-22.) Those days will be so terrible that the Lord will have to shorten the time of daylight, as no flesh could be saved otherwise.

We are aware of the teaching of the Bible, "For whom the Lord loveth, he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son he receiveth. If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?" Heb.12:6-7. Israel had gone astray in her rejection of the Messiah and her leaders gladly took the blame and passed it on to their children. "When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this righteous person. See ye to it. Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children." Matt.27:24-25. Israel has been scattered for some two thousand years. The Hebrew people were persecuted and hated during all of those years. Now she is being regathered back into her promised land under great opposition from the surrounding nations. This is similar but to a greater extent than in the days of Ezra and Nehemiah. Her final punishment will be during the great tribulation and especially the abomination of desolation spoken of by Daniel and confirmed by Christ. The Lord knows the plight that they will be in and warns them. "When ye, therefore, shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place (whosoever readeth, let him understand), then let them who are in Judea flee into the mountains;" Matt.24:15-16. This is all in the grace of God, toward his chosen race of people. However, when this will happen, many will realize that the Incarnate Son of God is the Messiah and is the coming King, to sit upon the throne of David in Jerusalem. Those 144,000 Hebrew youth will become the missionaries of the world and will have the name of Jehovah rather than the mark of the beast. They will evangelize the world under the threat of death. Moses and Elijah will also proclaim the Gospel of the Kingdom and the angelic beings shall also

broadcast the everlasting Gospel. The Incarnate Son of God will be rejected by many, due to the infiltration of billions of demons. This will be Satan's last stand before he is finally cast into the lake of fire. His persuasive power will gather great armies together against the Lord. Christ in his omniscience is prepared for all of this and will come forth the Victor.

Although we have all of the evidence from the Word of God, this rejection which started with Christ's earthly ministry will continue, even during the millennium. Man is naturally rebellious against God, desiring to exercise his own choice, regardless of the circumstances. Under the most favorable conditions of the Kingdom of Righteousness, many will rebel against God's perfect righteousness and become easy prey for Satan when he is loosed from the bottomless pit, for a season. (Rev.20:7-8.) The final verdict that God places upon such is, "He that is unjust, let him be unjust still; and he that is filthy, let him be filthy still; and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still; and he that is holy, let him be holy still. And behold, I come quickly, and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. Blessed are they that wash their robes, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city." Rev.22:11-14.

V. THE COMMISSIONING BY THE INCARNATE CHRIST.

It is significant that the Holy Spirit allowed us to have in writing that very precious prayer of the Lord Jesus Christ. Christ as our Prophet, Priest and King, interceded for the immediate disciples, and included all of us who would believe in his intercessory prayer. This took place before Christ went to the cross, as he poured out his heart to his Eternal Father. "And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves. I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from evil. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. Sanctify them through thy truth; thy word is truth. As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth. Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also who shall believe on me through their word; That they all may be one, as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us; that the world may believe that thou hast sent me." Jn.17:13-21.

The Lord Jesus Christ had offered himself to Israel as their king, and even fulfilled all prophecy concerning the kingship. He sent his disciples out to offer the Gospel of the kingdom to Israel (Matt.10:5-15.), and also entered into Jerusalem by way of the golden gate, and afterward the gate was securely sealed according to prophecy.(Ezek.44:1-3.) Then the Lord sent his disciples out the second time, not only to Israel but to all the people. "And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and bag, and shoes, lacked ye anything? And they said, Nothing. Then said he unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his bag; and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one. For I say unto you that this that is written must yet be accomplished in me. And he was reckoned among the transgressors; for the things concerning me have a fulfillment." Lk.22:35-37.

The Lord gave that great commission unto the disciples after the resurrection and before the day of Pentecost. "Go ye, therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you; and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the ages." Matt.28:19-20. Also during those 40 days with the disciples he taught them many things about the kingdom, but told them to tarry in Jerusalem until they would be baptized by the Holy Spirit. "For John truly baptized with water, but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit not many days from now." Acts 1:5.

As the disciples were with Christ during those 40 days they were waiting for the Lord to restore the kingdom to Israel, ignoring that great commission which was entrusted to them. (Acts 1:6.) Every generation of believers has the responsibility to tell the Gospel to every person. The coming kingdom of Righteousness has its appointed time from God the Father.

As the final day came for Christ to return to his heavenly home, the disciples saw a marvelous air lift of the Lord. The Lord had assured them that they would receive power after the Holy Spirit would come upon them, for that great commission. "But ye shall receive power, after the Holy Spirit is come upon you; and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth." Acts 1:8. The disciples were given the final commission to go unto the uttermost part of this world with the Gospel. This message has been carried around the world for almost two thousand years and the expectation which those two angels who appeared like men gave to the disciples still is as certain now as it was then. "And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven as he went up, behold two men stood by them in white apparel; who also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing into heaven? This same Jesus, who is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven." Acts 1:10-11.

This great commission and commandment of the Lord applies to each Christian and none are exempted from it. It is true, we all cannot go to the distant parts of the world, but we are to witness to the saving grace of our loving Lord, wherever we are. We are to have a part in sending witnesses around the world through our prayers and our support. This ministry has been entrusted to those who are born again. There are times when the Lord sends his angels to this earth for a particular purpose and human beings have entertained them unawares that they were angels. "Be not forgetful to entertain strangers; for thereby some have entertained angels unawares." Heb.13:2. The Lord often prepares the way for the Gospel to reach those in "The Regions Beyond" by various signs and wonders. But, remember to be ready at all times with a witness for the Lord. Whatever the conditions or circumstances, the Lord has promised never to leave you nor forsake you as you fulfill that great commission.

Christ who is the express image of God took upon a form of man and subjected himself to the limitations of mankind to become the substitute unto death, that we being dead in trespasses and sins, might be made alive forevermore. The incarnation of Almighty God left his home in glory to accomplish this for us. "Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high," Heb.1:3. The work of substitutionary atonement has been accomplished, and the penalty for sin has been completed. Christ cannot be crucified again.

CONCLUSION

Christ the Incarnate and Eternal Son of God has been made manifested to the earthly people, so that they may know and understand that God is mindful of all of his creation. God's Master Plan has never had to be changed down through the ages and is without error. Justice has been upheld in all that God has stated and will accomplish everything that he has said. There never has been any wavering in God's attitude toward sin and the full penalty has been paid with actual and real human blood because of the Incarnate Christ. It was the only possible way for those who believe to escape the dreadful punishment for sin. Although God cannot be added to or diminished, yet this act of love which the Eternal Son of God has shown, allows the eternal character of God to be satisfied. This gives us access to the righteousness of Christ through an act of faith.

Throughout eternity, we will marvel and praise the living God for so great salvation, given to those who only deserved so great condemnation. "Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant, make you perfect in every good work to do his will, working in you that which is well-pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory forever and ever. Amen" Heb.13:20-21.

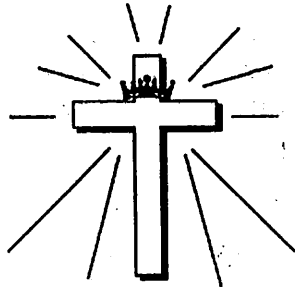
It bears repeating, to remind the students of the Bible, that the Eternal Incarnate Son of God has always existed in his entirety and nothing has been added to him or taken away from him. He is 100% God and 100% man. He is the only begotten of God the Father and is the exact and express image of God the Father. Those that behold the Lord Jesus Christ see an exact duplicate of God the Father. Christ is God/Man and we have been made in the likeness and image of God. Although we were made originally a little lower than the angels, we have been exalted to the position of being indwelt forever by God the Holy Spirit. Not only are we indwelt by the Holy Spirit, but there are angelic hosts ministering unto us according to our needs. "Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?" Heb.1:14. The Lord Jesus Christ shall be exalted forever in his perfect righteousness. "But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is forever and ever; a scepter of righteousness is the scepter of thy kingdom. Thou has loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore, God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows. And, Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens the work of thine hands." Heb.1:8-10.

Christ the hypostatic union of both Divinity and mankind has made possible the removal of sin, death and hell, through his sacrifice. To all who believe that Jesus Christ is the Eternal Son of God, who died for their sins are partakers of the Divine spark through God the Holy Spirit. It is a marvelous thing that God has accomplished through his Son. We now have God the Holy Spirit, giving us a new eternal birth that will remain throughout eternity. "Oh the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are his judgements, and his ways past finding out!" Rom.11:33.

QUESTIONS CHAPTER FOUR

1. Why was it necessary for a human body to redeem depraved mankind?
2. Explain why only God could be the redeemer.
3. Why was only the seed of the woman essential to redeem from sin?
4. Where did sin first appear? Give Scripture.
5. Why did the earth become the battleground for dealing with sin?
6. Explain "The Incarnate Lineage". Give examples from the Bible.
7. Give Scripture concerning "The Unconditional Covenant" made by God with King David.
8. Name some of the ways that Satan tried to stop the Divine plan as to the Messianic Lineage.
9. How do we understand Christ's qualification as "Prophet, Priest, and King"? Give Scripture to verify your answer.
10. What do you understand about "Atonement"?
11. How, was our redemption provided? Give Scripture.
12. Name a few ways that Christ was rejected as the King of Israel.
13. Did God have to change his "Master Plan"? Give reasons for answer.
14. Give a survey of John chapter 17.
15. Write briefly on Revelation 22:11-14.
16. Was the great commission given to all Believers or to only a few? Give reasons and Scripture for your answer.
17. Write briefly on Hebrew 1:8-10.

CHAPTER FIVE



Christ the Bridegroom

CHAPTER FIVE

CHRIST THE BRIDEGROOM

INTRODUCTION

One of the early statements concerning the Bridegroom, as John the Baptist was being questioned, referring to the Messiah and the marriage of the Lamb of God, is this. "Then there arose a question between some of John's disciples and the Jews about purifying. And they came unto John, and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond the Jordan, to whom thou bearest witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him. John answered, and said, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven. Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him. He that hath the bride is the bridegroom; but the friend of the bridegroom, who standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because this is my joy, therefore, is fulfilled. He must increase, but I must decrease." Jn.3:25-30. This is a very significant revelation from the Word, to the new identity that Christ would have as the Bridegroom. It also identified the saints among the Jews as friends of the Bridegroom, to whom John identified himself. The out pouring of the Holy Spirit had already taken place, when John wrote this, but the statement was made during the time when John the Baptist was heralding the King of kings as the Messiah of Israel. We will be considering the various aspects of this truth in detail.

OUTLINE

- I. BAPTISM AS AN IDENTIFICATION.**
 - A. ISRAEL**
 - B. THE CHURCH.**
- II. THE MYSTERY OF THE BODY OF CHRIST.**
 - A. ISRAEL AS THE WIFE OF GOD THE FATHER.**
 - B. THE CHURCH AS "THE BRIDE TO BE" OF CHRIST.**
- III. THE MARRIAGE OF THE LAMB.**
 - A. THE CHURCH "CALLED OUT" TO BE SEPARATE.**
 - B. THE CHURCH PRESENTED TO GOD THE FATHER.**
 - C. THE HEAVENLY FEAST WITH ALL THE SAINTS.**

I. BAPTISM AS AN IDENTIFICATION.

A. ISRAEL

Since we are not dealing specifically with Israel, concerning baptism, we will briefly consider Israel's baptism by John the Baptist. John's calling by God was to prepare Israel for the coming kingdom. It was as a purifying ritual, preceded with real repentance and preparations for Israel to receive the Messiah, prior to the setting up of the kingdom of righteousness. As you may recall in past writings, I have explained the reason why God sent John the Baptist instead of Elijah, as was prophesied. (Mal.4:5-6.) In God's omniscience, he knew that Israel would reject their Messiah, and therefore God sent John the Baptist to herald the rejected Messiah. "Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me; and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in; behold, he shall come, saith the Lord of hosts. But who may abide the day of his coming? And who shall stand when he appeareth? For he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap." Mal.3:1-2.

John the Baptist was God's chosen vessel to prepare Israel for the coming of the Lord. Zacharias the priest and Elizabeth his wife were without a son, BUT GOD prepared the way as they prayed. John was born in due time and all praise was given to Almighty God. "And his father, Zacharias, was filled with the Holy Spirit, and prophesied, saying, Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and redeemed his people, and hath raised up an horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David;" Lk.1:67-69. Yes, John was the substitute for Elijah, but was the spirit of Elijah to prepare the way for the coming of the Lord. Baptism was used as an identification and outward sign of the preparation, for the individual among the children of Israel, to receive the Messiah. This was definitely not the baptism of Christians, for that command from Christ came after his resurrection. (Matt.28:19-20.) Also the prophecy of Joel 2:28; with the real baptism of the Holy Spirit came on the day of Pentecost. Note the following references.(Acts 2:1-12; Acts 8:17; Acts 10:44; Acts 19:6.) Many repented and were prepared for the coming of the Messiah, but the religious authorities rejected Christ and the kingdom was postponed.

Although Christ continued to teach kingdom principles, even during his 40 days with the disciples, after the resurrection, he knew that he would be despised and rejected, a man of sorrows. (Isa.53:3.) The only reference that he made to the church was, when Peter said, "Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God." Matt.16:16. "And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona; for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father, who is in heaven. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter (a little pebble), and upon this rock I will build my church, and the gates of hades shall not prevail against it." Matt.16:16-18. So, the true church has it's foundation upon that marvelous truth. "Thou art the Christ, the Son of the Living God."

B. THE CHURCH

The complete ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ was presenting himself as the Messiah of Israel, teaching the principles of the coming kingdom of righteousness. He fulfilled all the prophecy concerning his first advent, even to the entering through the golden gate, during his triumphal entry. (Ezek.44:2; Zech.9:9; Matt.21:1-11.) This was necessary, for as his next entrance will be from heaven itself. (Rev.19:11-16.) If God the Holy Spirit had not provided us with the Epistles, we could have easily fallen into the fallacy that the church began in the wilderness. We praise God for the complete revelation of the Word of God! With such revelation as Romans chapter nine and eleven, there is no doubt whatsoever of God dealing with Israel as a nation. All the Old Testament promises to Abraham and to King David would be nullified, if God were only dealing with the church. The clock of Israel will tick again at the close of the Gentile time table. Their clock will continue during the last week or seven years prophesied in the Book of Daniel, and the Book of the Revelation of Jesus Christ. For almost two thousand years, God has been calling out a body of believers called the church. This body is made up of all nations, regardless of language, color, or race. It has been called the mystery age of grace and is in fulfillment of Joel 2:28.

With Christ's earthly ministry completed, and rejected as Israel's Messiah, Christ is now free to establish saints collectively called the body of Christ. For almost two thousand years, the members of this body have been called out as the Ecclesia, during this age of Grace. The Disciples were told to tarry in Jerusalem until they would receive the necessary power from the Holy Spirit to evangelize throughout the whole world. (Acts.1:8.) The new birth taught to Nicodemus, now could be understood. Christ also promised his disciples that they would do greater things than he had done during his earthly ministry. "For the Father loveth the Son, and showeth him all things that he himself doeth; and he will show him greater works than these, that ye may marvel." Jn.5:20. "Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do, because I go unto my Father. And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son." Jn.14:12-13. These are quite amazing statements from the Lord, but when you understand that God the Holy Spirit was sent from heaven to give eternal life, making us new creatures, then it all becomes clear as to what the Lord meant. These greater works are based upon the baptism of the Holy Spirit, giving us this new birth. "For by one Spirit were we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Greeks, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit. For the body is not one member, but many." 1 Cor.12:13-14.

THE BRIDE TO BE

We often refer to a building when using the word "Church", which is alright if it is understood to be the meeting place for the believers. The true church is made up of individual believers born again by the Holy Spirit. "Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?" 1 Cor.3:16. God in his great desire to have fellowship with those whom he made in his likeness and image, has so decreed that God the Holy Spirit would come and give that necessary new birth, as well as abide in those Christians who would become

the bride of the Eternal Son of God. The Bible proclaims this in so many ways and we want to take this opportunity of searching the Scriptures for evidence.

1. **The Holy Spirit to indwell forever. (Jn.14:16-17.)**
2. **The Holy Spirit is the teacher of "The Bride To Be". (Jn.14:26; Jn.16:13.)**
3. **The Holy Spirit provides special gifts to be used by "The Bride To Be." (1 Cor. 12:1-11.)**
4. **The Holy Spirit prepares each member of "The Bride To Be" to fulfill the various duties accordingly. (1 Cor.12:12-25.)**
5. **Since "The Bride To Be" is made up of many members, we become one body in a spiritual unity, working together. (1 Cor.12:26-31.)**
6. **The Holy Spirit makes possible a special Divine love, proclaiming the fruit of the Spirit. (1 Cor.13:1-13; Gal.5:22-26.)**
7. **Since the Holy Spirit is the Third Person of the Trinity, it is possible to grieve Him, when we disobey Him by sinning. (Eph.4:30.)**
8. **The Holy Spirit who dwells within us, is constantly lifting us up in prayer before God the Father. (Rom.8:26.)**
9. **The Holy Spirit is our constant guard against the demonic world. (2 Thess.2:7; Jn.16:7-11.)**
10. **The Holy Spirit is the source of power for "The Bride To Be".(Zech.4:6.)**
11. **The Holy Spirit wants our all as believers so that we are constantly being filled by Him. (Eph.3:19.)**

BELIEVERS ARE MEMBERS TOGETHER IN ONE BODY.

The Eternal Son of God desires a complete bride, with all of the necessary talents, and the Holy Spirit helps each of us in our own capacity to be exactly what the Lord wishes. As we use our natural talents for the glory of God, so we will be entrusted with other talents or gifts which the Holy Spirit will give to us. Nevertheless, these talents and gifts are bestowed upon us, according to the will of the Holy Spirit. (1 Cor.12:11.) There is a very important issue at stake, as we seek the perfect will of God in our individual lives. "And be not conformed to this world, but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. For I say, through the grace given unto me, to

every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think, but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith. For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office, so we being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy, according to the proportion of faith; Or ministry, let us wait on our ministering; or he that teacheth, on teaching; Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation; he that giveth, let him do it with liberality; he that ruleth, with diligence; he that showeth mercy, with cheerfulness." Rom.12:2-8.

There may be some Christians who may ask, "Why doesn't the Holy Spirit give me more ways to serve the Lord, than I have?" The answer most likely would be, "Why should I give you more talents, when you do not use your natural talents for the glory of God?" A Christian can be too involved with world affairs, and be deprived from the most important place in the work of the Lord. "Let love be without hypocrisy, Abhor that which is evil; cling to that which is good. Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love, in honor preferring one another; Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord; Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation, continuing diligently in prayer;" Rom.12:9-12. I am sure that if we can practice such principles in the Christian life, that the Holy Spirit will gladly add to our natural talents, with gifts beyond our own expectations. If we desire to be filled by the Holy Spirit, we must also realize that we must be emptied of worldly desires. As Ambassadors for the Lord Jesus Christ, we must be aware that our talents are given to us to bear much fruit for the Lord. "If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. In this is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples." Jn.15:7-8.

THE CHRISTIAN BODY SHOULD BE ALIVE FOR THE LORD.

"Wherefore, laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speaking, as new born babes, desire the pure milk of the word, that ye may grow by it, if so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious; to whom, coming as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men but chosen of God, and precious, ye also, as living stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ." 1 Pet.2:1-5. As the Lord Jesus Christ is "The Corner Stone" as well as the foundation in our lives as believers, we need to constantly remind ourselves that we are alive forevermore in the Lord Jesus Christ. Let the world know, that we live, and move, and have our life in the Eternal Son of God. "For we are laborers together with God; ye are God's cultivated field, ye are God's building." 1 Cor.3:9. "For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord, and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake. For God who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shone in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ. But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us." 2 Cor.4:5-7.

We should not strive in the Christian life, hoping that maybe we will attain an eternal status before the Bridegroom, but we are assured by the seal of the Holy Spirit, that very day we believed. "That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ; In whom ye also trusted, after ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation; in whom also after

ye believed, ye were sealed with that Holy Spirit of promise, who is the earnest (guarantee) of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory." Eph.1:12-14. A glorified body like unto the Bridegroom is waiting for us at the time of the rapture, whether we died in Christ or remain alive, at his coming, to take us to the Father in heaven.

Always remember, as you study the Word of God that our special blessings are through faithful Abraham, not as Jews but we are separated from Israel as members of the body of Christ. All preparations are being made in heaven, with a place being prepared for the bride of Christ, the rapture of "The Complete Bride To Be", the presentation of "The Bride To Be" to the Father, the marriage, and finally that great wedding banquet, where all of the saints of all ages will be invited to attend. We as the bride of Christ will have the special seating with the Lord Jesus Christ, "The Bridegroom"! What a day of rejoicing that will be! Through the baptism of the Holy Spirit, we are identified with Christ throughout eternity. We have been given the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, making us part and parcel with the Divine nature, which will remain with us forever and ever. We that have been born during this mystery age of the church, are given a special place in the economy of God. May we ever be mindful of the position in which God has placed us. We have been bought with a great price, bringing newness of life to us. May our daily walk as Christians, be a means of glorifying the Lord. "For our citizenship is in heaven, from where also we look for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ.." Phil.3:20.

II. THE MYSTERY OF THE BODY OF CHRIST.

THE OLD TESTAMENT EXAMPLE.

The mystery of the body of Christ is assured by way of an Old Testament example of God the Father, claiming Israel as his wife. "For the Maker is thine husband; the Lord of hosts is his name; and the Redeemer, the Holy One of Israel; The God of the whole earth shall he be called." Isa.54:5. "Israel was holiness unto the Lord, and the first fruits of his increase; all that devour him shall offend; evil shall come upon them, saith the Lord." Jer.2:3. "Now when I passed by thee, and looked upon thee, behold thy time was the time of love; and I spread my skirt over thee, and covered thy nakedness. Yea, I swore unto thee, and entered into a covenant with thee, saith the Lord God, and thou became mine." Ezek.16:8. Read this whole chapter of Ezekiel sixteen for further understanding how God the Father cherished Israel as the intimacy of a wife. God the Father has always been mindful of Israel and would become very angry when she would take these dumb idols to worship, rather than the living God. (Hosea chapter two.) Israel is the apple of God's eye, and is the chosen race through whom the Messiah entered this world, to become the sacrifice for sin. However, due to her rejection of the Messiah, God had scattered her throughout the world. Now God is gathering her back in the promised land, from the uttermost parts of the world, to receive her final punishment, during the great tribulation. (Rev.6-18.) This last seven years given by the Holy Spirit in prophecy to Daniel will be the final punishment for Israel and the out pouring of God's wrath against the wicked nations. Praise God, we as the Bride of Christ, will be caught up, and delivered out from the wrath to come. (1 Thess.1:10.)

THE NEW TESTAMENT BELIEVERS - THE BRIDE TO BE.

As we have already discovered from the previous references in the Scripture, that the true church is called "The Body Of Christ". God has made all necessary preparation for the New Testament believers, by a guarantee and seal of the Holy Spirit. This is not merely a coming of the Holy Spirit upon the individual believers, but rather the indwelling by the Holy Spirit within each member of the body of Christ for eternity. God is showing forth his great love both for his Eternal Son, as well as toward those who believe in him. "Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the children of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be, but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is." 1 Jn.3:1-2. As the disciples beheld the risen Lord, they looked upon him in his risen body, yet the scars from the crucifixion were still there, giving him identification, as the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sins of the world. The disciples on the way to Emmaus saw him as a man, and when he broke the bread they saw the scars in his hands. (Lk.24:13-32.) The women beheld the empty tomb and Mary saw her Lord face to face. (Jn.20:1-18.) The ten disciples saw him in the upper room. (Lk.24:33-43.) The Lord did eat a piece of broiled fish and an honey comb. This happened again by the sea of Galilee, when Christ himself prepared breakfast for the seven weary disciples. (Jn.21:"12-14.) Thomas was with the other disciples, as they gathered the second time. (Jn.20:24-29.) We need not question as to what kind of a body we will have throughout eternity, knowing, the manner in which the Lord showed himself to the believers.

This is a mystery age in which we are living, as God calls out the members of the body of Christ. These bodies of ours will be changed when The Rapture takes place. (1 Thess.4:17; 1 Cor.15:53-57.) "Behold, I show you a mystery: We shall not all sleep, but we shall be changed. In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump; for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.' 1 Cor.15:51-52. This is indeed a mystery and marvelous creation of our Living God! "For our citizenship is in heaven, from where also we look for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ. Who will change our lowly body, that it may be fashioned like his glorious body, according to the working by which he is able even to subdue all things unto himself." Phil.3:20-21. Our Bridegroom is not only our Savior, but also the Creator, Lord and Master! We are among those who are specially blessed to become the bride of Christ. It is declared in mystery form at this present time , but when we see him face to face, we will know as we are known. "For now we see in a mirror, darkly; but then, face to face; now I know in part, but then shall I know even as also I am known." 1 Cor.13:12. Since flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, (1 Cor.15:50.) this glorified body which Christ took upon himself, has the capability to live both in heaven and upon this earth.

THE BODY OF CHRIST - KEPT TOGETHER IN LOVE.

"That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ, in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge." Col.2:2-3.

This mystery of the unity within the body of Christ is not dependent or based upon individual church organizations whether they be large or small, but rather upon the Divine unification by the Holy Spirit. This unification can only be knit together with Divine love which comes from God the Holy Spirit. We usually ask, "What Church do you attend"?, when we should ask, "What is your relationship with the Holy Spirit"? The Holy Spirit always exalts the Lord Jesus Christ, and not himself. "Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. For in him dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead bodily. And ye are complete in him, who is the head of all principalities and power;" Col.2:8-10. Church organization, or church planning cannot keep the body of Christ together, but there must be, the love of Christ constraining us. (2 Cor.5:14-19.) This prepares us to be "Ambassadors for Christ". (2 Cor.5:20.) Regardless of our denominational or non-denominational affiliations, we as members of the body of Christ are to work together for the glory and honor of the Lord Jesus Christ. (2 Cor.6:1.) As Paul the apostle, wrote and proclaimed the unsearchable riches of the Lord Jesus Christ, the grace of God was established among the churches. (2 Cor.8:1.) For almost two thousand years, this eternal body of Christ has been established throughout the whole world, in mystery form. One day, the heavens will open and the glory of God in the person of the Lord Jesus Christ will burst forth! Those prepared glorified bodies will appear in all the brightness of the heavenlies. "And before the throne there was a sea of glass like crystal; and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four living creatures full of eyes in front and behind." Rev.4:6. The glories of God to be manifested in that great day are far greater than our finite minds can comprehend. God is doing a great thing, as he gathers together in Christ that mystery body, to become the bride of Christ.

III. THE MARRIAGE OF THE LAMB OF GOD.

INTRODUCTION

This marriage of the Lamb of God, who took away the sins of the world, nailing them to the cross will be glorified and honored by those of the redeemed. During our pilgrimage through this present life, we are building up a marvelous thanksgiving to our Lord by remaining faithful to him. "And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne and the living creatures and the elders, and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands, saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honor, and glory, and blessing. And every creature that is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, and honor, and glory, and power be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb forever and ever." Rev.5:11-13.

A. THE TRUE CHURCH, CALLED OUT TO BE SEPARATE.

"Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers; for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? And what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? Or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what

agreement hath the temple of God with idols? For ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell with them, and walk in them; and will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore, come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, and I will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty." 2 Cor.6:14-18.

The true Church of believers has been called out from any false religious association with man made worship. We are pilgrims passing through this life upon planet earth, with a heavenly destination, bringing us into the very presence of the Creator of heaven and earth. As we are to be married to the Lamb of God, who has taken away the sins of the world, so we need to separate ourselves from unbelievers of all sorts. Christians have been warned not to marry an unbeliever, for this only leads to compromise, giving the world, the flesh and the devil, inroads into your family life. We are admonished, "Having, therefore, these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God." 2 Cor.7:1.

Today the true church and the future bride of Christ is faced with all sorts of compromise and false teachings within their assemblies. This needs to be guarded against. With the ecumenical movement infiltrating into the churches of today, we need to keep separated from them. Liberalism may put up a beautiful front, with their all inclusive form of religion that tolerates anything, and everybody, beware and come out from among them. We know that such religious groups will by pass the true gospel and substitute a social order, striving for a one world form of worship with a one world government. This is predicted in the Bible, that such religions would help place the one world dictator into power. (Rev.13:1-18; Rev.17:1-13.) We need to take heed as to our association with those unbelievers. "And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the ages hath been hidden in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ, to the intent that now, unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places, might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God, according to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus, our Lord, in whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him." Eph.3:9-12.

God is a jealous God and desires to keep us, who have become new creatures in Christ Jesus, as his very own. There is no compromise with God and he desires the same attitude in us. "Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust of it; but he that doeth the will of God abideth forever.: 1 Jn.2:15-17. "Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son. Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father; he that confesseth the Son hath the Father also." 1 Jn.2:22-23. "Beloved, believe not every spirit, but test the spirits whether they are of God; because many false prophets are gone out into the world. By this know ye the Spirit of God; every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God; and every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God; and this is that spirit of antichrist, of which ye have heard that it should come, and even now already is in the world. Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world." 1 Jn.4:1-4. "And we know that the Son of God is come,

and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true; and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life. Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen." 1 Jn.5:20-21.

B. PRESENTATION OF "THE BRIDE TO BE" TO GOD THE FATHER.

INTRODUCTION

As we have noted from the Old Testament how God the Father identified himself with Israel as his lawful wedded wife, and how Israel went after idols and became as a harlot, but God in his mercy through grace, sought after her (The Book of the Song of Solomon and other references). The Work of the Holy Spirit is gathering a bride for the Lord. We have another wonderful example of this also in the Old Testament. (Gen.24:1-67.) The servant of Abraham seeks a bride for Isaac, so the Holy Spirit is gathering a bride for the Lord Jesus Christ. When that "Bride To Be" is completely gathered, the Lord himself will leave his heavenly home to meet her in the air.

THE GREAT AIR LIFT OF THE BRIDE AND THE WEDDING GUESTS.

For almost two thousand years, the Lord has been preparing a place for his bride in the Father's mansions. "In my Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself, that where I am, there ye may be also." Jn.14:2-3. The Lord has related this unique unification with him as a marriage, in its intimacy. Please note in the Book of the revelation of Jesus Christ, how the Lord compares the seven churches. Each group have an angel watching over them, as well as Christ dwelling in the midst of them. (Rev.1:9-20.) This is as true today as it was in the day of the apostles. God the Holy Spirit has been busy gathering believers from all over the world and providing them with the new birth, making possible eternal life with the Lord. In the fullness of time, as the Father sent forth his Son as the Savior (Gal.4:4-5.), so he will send him forth as the Shepherd to lead the saints to their Heavenly Father. When the time comes, which the Father has determined, that trumpet will sound throughout the universe, and there will be the greatest "Air Lift" of all ages. "For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first; Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air; and so shall we ever be with the Lord." 1 Thess.4:16-17. We will be meeting the Lord in the air, rather than in Jerusalem. The reason for this is, the Lord must present us to the Father in our glorified bodies. "In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump; for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible and we shall be changed." 1 Cor.15:52. The graves must be opened as the dead of all ages, who are in Paradise with the Lord, will receive that new body, but their identification as individuals, will be revealed at the time of the Rapture. They know as they are known in heaven at this very moment, but when they receive their glorified bodies, their identification and glorification will be united. Their witness in this world will be confirmed as these individual graves are opened.

THE PREPARATIONS FOR THE PRESENTATION TO GOD THE FATHER.

There will be a period of seven years in our heavenly home, being caught up, out from the wrath to come. (1 Thess.1:10.) During this time in heaven there will be seven years of activity, as follows.

- 1. The Judgement seat of Christ for all believers.
(2 Cor.5:10; 1 Cor.3:9-16.)**
- 2. Issuing of rewards for faithfulness.
(1 Cor.9:17; Col.2:18; Col.3:24; Rev.22:12; Rev.15:13.)**
- 3. The opening of the seals at zero hour for the great tribulation to begin.
(Rev.4:1-5:1-14.)**
- 4. Entering the Heavenly Mansions, prepared for the bride of Christ.
(Jn.14:3.)**
- 5. The presentation of "The Bride To Be" to God the Father.
(Jn.17:21-26.)**
- 6. The Marriage Feast and Banquet, with the Heavenly Communion.
(Rev.19:9; Matt.26:29.)**
- 7. The Great reunion with the Saints of all ages in our Glorified Bodies.
(Rev.19:9; Jn.3:29.)**
- 8. The Great Battle of Michael the Archangel and his armies drive out Satan and his demons from Heaven. (Rev. 12:7-12.)**

The angelic hosts will be busy preparing for the marriage of the Lamb, and that great feast that will follow. There will be beautiful and lovely singing to entertain both the future bride of Christ and the friends of the Bridegroom. There will be glorious re-unions with our friends and relatives as well as meeting the saints of all ages. "And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne and the living creatures and the elders, and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands, saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honor, and glory, and blessing." Rev.5:11-12. The Bible is full of information concerning God's servants down through the ages, and it behooves us as believers to study the Bible thoroughly, so that we are not strangers with those who have had a great part in the Master Plan of God.

As to how we as the future bride will be presented to God the Father is God's secret. We know that the great throngs of both angels and saints will be gathered together as a : "Sea of

Glass". (Rev.46.) The brightness and shikinah glory shall shine forth throughout the heavenlies, to the praise and glory of the Eternal Son of God.

THE MARRIAGE OF THE LAMB AND THE CELEBRATION.

"Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to him; for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready. And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white; for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints. And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they who are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God. And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, See thou do it not! I am thy fellow servant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus. Worship God; for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy." Rev.19:7-10. There are several items of great interest in this brief portion, describing the marriage and the supper.

1. **Christ is identified in his sacrifice as the Lamb of God. (Rev.19:7.)**
2. **The church or body of Christ is described as "His Wife". (Rev.19:7.)**
3. **The special garment for the wedding , of fine pure white linen is the righteousness of the saints. His righteousness becomes our righteousness. (Col.3:3.)**
4. **The Old Testament saints, which are the friends of the Bridegroom, will attend the marriage and the great feast. (Jn.3:29.)**
5. **One of the brethren, who is in heaven reveals these things of the future to John, showing that the saints that have gone before us are continually learning the prophetic Master Plan of God. (Rev.19:7-10.)**
6. **Jesus is the spirit of prophecy, or in other words, Jesus is the prophetic central character in this Master Plan of God. Acts 2:18.)**

C. THE HEAVENLY FEAST PERTAINING TO THE MARRIAGE.

There are great details omitted in this union of the body of Christ in holy matrimony and the marriage supper, and there are many surprises waiting for the future bride of Christ. We are aware that sometime before, during or after the marriage ceremony, the Lord will be with the Old Testament saints as well as his bride and celebrate the Passover and the communion. The Lord himself has said, "And as they were eating, Jesus took bread , and blessed it, and broke it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat, this is my body. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom." Matt.26:26-29. This is a great expression of love from the Lord Jesus Christ. May we express our love for the Lord, by doing his will.

We are not given much detail concerning this feast, but we have been given a clue as God's method of gathering believers together. We have the parable of the householder who loaned out his vineyard. (Matt.21:33-46; Mk.12:1-9; Lk.20:9-19; Isa.5:1-7.) "The kingdom of heaven is like a certain king, who made a marriage for his son, and sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding; and they would not come. Again he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them who are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner; my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready; come unto the marriage. But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise; And the remnant took his servants, and treated them shamefully, and slew them. But when the king heard of it, he was angry; and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city." Matt.22:2-7. In this parable, the Lord was directly speaking about Israel, and how they murdered their prophets, and we know what happened to the Jews, they were scattered throughout the world and the City of Jerusalem burned. Note also Luke 14:16-24.

The important factor concerning these parables is, that God the Father is going to prepare a great wedding and a glorious banquet for all of the saints of all ages. During that feast we as the bride of Christ, will have a special place next to the Bridegroom. The banquet hall in heaven will be filled with the glory of God and although there may be lights upon the millions of tables, there will be no need for other light than the shikinah glory of God. It reminds us of that Holy City, the New Jerusalem, coming down from the heavenlies of God. "And he carried me away in the Spirit to a great and high mountain, and showed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God. Having the glory of God; and her light was like a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal;.....And I saw no temple in it; for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it. And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it, for the glory of God did light it, and the Lamb is the lamp of it." Rev.21:10-23.

THE CONCLUSION

The heavenly feast will be a continual banquet throughout eternity, when the Lord makes the new heavens and the new earth. But after that 7 years of heavenly sunshine, the saints of God will have a mission of special commission to perform on planet earth. While in the heavenly mansions of God, we will witness that great and final battle in heaven, when Michael the archangel casts out Satan and all of his demons.(Isa.14:12-17; Rev.9:1-12; Rev.12:7-17.) This will take place after we are in heaven for three and one half years, and will zero in the "Abomination of Desolation" spoken of by Daniel, and confirmed by the Lord Jesus Christ. There will be much for us to share with the earthly people as to what heaven is like. We will have our glorified bodies as proof that "For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality." 1 Cor.15:53. There will be many who will believe, but the majority will reject as we will see in our further study. That will be a glorious day when we see our Savior face to face, and be like him in that glorified body.

The scene will now change from the heavenly mansions of God the Father to a return to the earth with the Bridegroom. There will be much to talk about among the earth dwellers as we fulfill the new commission of teaching the kingdom of righteousness to nations of the world. Our memories of those seven years in heaven will be glorious and refreshing. The fellowship

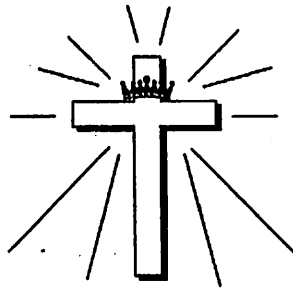
with each other throughout the kingdom age will be wonderful. Being with the Lord Jesus Christ in person, will fill our souls with the grace of God. Almighty God has prepared a great future for the saints of all ages. These present beauties and joys of this old world system will long be forgotten, as we behold the mighty works of God in his new creation of the future. The Triune God has reserved the best for those who have put their trust in the Eternal Son of God. Oh the love that drew salvation's plan, Oh the grace that brought it down to man! Dear student of the Word of God, do not settle just for a knowledge about God, but desire to know his perfect will for your life, allowing Almighty God to mold and make you after His will. "I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world, but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect will of God. For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think, but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith. For we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office, so we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith; Or ministry, let us wait on our ministering; or he that teacheth, on teaching; Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation; he that giveth, let him do it with liberality; he that ruleth, with diligence; he that showeth mercy, with cheerfulness. Let love be without hypocrisy. Abhor that which is evil; cling to that which is good. Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love, in honor preferring one another; Not slothful in business, fervent in spirit; serving the Lord; Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing diligently in prayer; Distributing to the necessity of the saints; given to hospitality. Bless them who persecute you; bless, and curse not. Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep. Be of the same mind one toward another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits. " Rom.12:1-16.

We as Christians are living in a very exciting time, as this age of Grace is drawing to a close. The signs of the coming of the Lord to rapture us home are growing more frequent and world wide. The imminent return of the Lord for his "Bride To Be" will soon be realized. Perhaps the count down by God the Father has begun, and our redemption is drawing very near. There is work to be done, while there is still time! May we give the Lord's great commission priority in our lives, while we are able to speed the Gospel light. God has entrusted us as Christians to be his ambassadors. "For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shone in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ. But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us." 2 Cor.4:6-7.

QUESTIONS CHAPTER FIVE

1. Explain the meaning of John 3:25-30.
2. Who are the friends of the Bridegroom?
3. What is the purpose of water baptism?
4. Explain the difference between John the Baptist's baptism and Matt.28:19-20.
5. Why did God send John the Baptist instead of Elijah?
6. Why did Jesus Christ only teach kingdom principles during his earthly ministry and not the Gospel for the church age?
7. Why was it necessary for Christ to enter through the Golden Gate into Jerusalem?
8. What greater works can believers do after Pentecost?
9. What work does the Holy Spirit do in believers in preparation for them to become the Bride of Christ?
10. Write briefly on "Believers Working Together in The Body of Christ".
11. What ministry does the body of Christ have while in these present bodies?
12. What Old Testament example do we have concerning "The Body of Christ"?
13. Explain the mystery age in which we are living.
14. Why should the true church be separate from other religious groups?
15. When will "The Body Of Christ" be presented to God the Father?
16. Who will be the wedding guests at the marriage of the Lamb?
17. What procedure is necessary before "The Bride " is presented to God the Father?
18. Name six things that take place, describing the marriage, and the supper.
19. What one thing has the Lord deprived himself of taking until his bride to be is in the kingdom of his Father?
20. Write briefly on the subject, "The Lamb of God - The Bridegroom".

CHAPTER SIX



Christ the Mighty Warrior

CHAPTER SIX

CHRIST

CHRIST THE MIGHTY WARRIOR

INTRODUCTION

The mighty power of the Triune God will be felt upon this earth when the Son of God comes to set up his kingdom of righteousness. The heavens will be aglow with the brightness of the living God. The evil forces upon the whole earth will be alerted to this great activity in the air, as the Son of God leads his heavenly angels into battle. We, as the saints of God, will be present as observers, beholding the great manifestation of the out pouring of the wrath of God against the satanic forces. The Bible gives us sufficient information, including the time it will occur when this great clash with the evil forces takes place. The following sequence of events will tell the story.

- I. THE COMPLETION OF THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION**
- II. BEHOLDING THE HEAVENS OPEN**
- III. THE BATTLE OF ARMAGEDDON**
- IV. CHRIST THE VICTOR**

-
- I. THE COMPLETION OF THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION.**
 - A. GOD FORETOLD THE OUT POURING OF HIS WRATH TO COME.**

This final great battle against the evil forces by the Lord Jesus Christ was foretold in the Bible. It was not an afterthought, nor a change in God's plans. God is immutable as well as omniscient and knows the end from the beginning. This is comforting to the saints of all ages, knowing that our Heavenly Father is sovereign and is in control of every affair. The battle will be fought in the Middle East, as Satan will attempt to destroy the chosen race of Israel at all cost. This land was given to Israel from the Euphrates south to the river of Egypt. (Gen.15:18; Deut.32:8.) Satan is aware of this and will muster together great armies to prevent the Lord from establishing His kingdom of righteousness. King Solomon was given the reign over this great territory as a type of the coming reign of Christ. (1 Ki.4:21.)

One outstanding reference to the time when the Lord will fight and establish his kingdom is, "He who sitteth in the heavens shall laugh; the Lord shall have them in derision. Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his great displeasure. Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. I will declare the decree: The Lord said unto me, Thou art my Son;

this day have I begotten thee. Ask of me, and I shall give thee the nations for thine inheritance, and the uttermost part of the earth for thy possession. Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel." Ps.2:4-9. The Lord God will come with a strong hand and He will destroy His enemies and He will rule. "Behold, the Lord God will come with strong hand, and his arm shall rule for him: Behold, his reward is with him, and his work before him." Isa.40:10.

The Lord is mindful of Israel, and although he has scattered this special nation to the ends of the world, so he is now in the process of bringing her back for punishment, as well as establishment in her own land. "Though I make a full end of all nations to which I have scattered thee, yet will I not make a full end of thee, but will correct thee in measure, and will not leave thee altogether unpunished." Jer.30:11.

We are not certain as to when the armies of the north will come into the prophetic picture, leading up to that battle of Armageddon, but the Lord will have the final victory before he sets up his kingdom of righteousness. (Ezek.38-39.) Daniel was given the revelation by the Holy Spirit as to the time that the beast would make the seven year covenant with Israel. Then when Satan and his demons are cast out of heaven, and the Dictator becomes possessed, this covenant will be broken after three and one half years. We are told the exact length of time. (Rev.12:6; Rev.11:3.) This is called the Abomination of Desolation. (Dan.9:27.) It will be as the Lord describes it, "For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened." Matt.24:21-22. This does not mean that there will be less hours in a 24 hour day, but rather less light. Here is what the word of God says. "And I will show wonders in the heavens and in the earth, blood, and fire, and pillars of smoke. The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood before the great and the terrible day of the Lord come." Joel 2:30-31. "And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars; so as the third part of them was darkened, and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise." Rev.8:12. "And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness; and they gnawed their tongues for pain. And blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds." Rev.16:10-11. God abides His time, as He is sovereign over all!

"I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of Days did sit, whose garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head like pure wool: his throne was like fiery flame, and his wheels as burning fire." Dan.7:9. "The burden of the word of the Lord for Israel, saith the Lord, which stretcheth forth the heavens, and layeth the foundation of the earth, and formeth the spirit of man within him. Behold, I will make Jerusalem a cup of trembling unto all the people round about, when they shall be in the siege both against Judah and against Jerusalem. And in that day will I make Jerusalem a burdensome stone for all people; all that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces, though all the people of the earth be gathered together against it." Zech.12:1-3. "And it shall come to pass, in all the land, saith the Lord, two parts therein shall be cut off and die, but the third shall be left therein. And I will bring the third part through the fire, and will refine them as silver is refined, and will try them as gold is tried: they shall call on my name, and I will hear them: I will say, It is my people: and they shall say, The Lord is my God." Zech.13:8-9. "And his feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives,

which is before Jerusalem on the east, and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, and there shall be a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south. And ye shall flee to the valley of the mountains: for the valley of the mountains shall reach unto AZAL: yea, ye shall flee, like as ye fled from before the earthquake in the days of Uzziah king of Judah: and the Lord my God shall come, and all the saints with thee. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the light shall not be clear, nor dark: But it shall be one day which shall be known to the Lord, not day, nor night: but it shall come to pass, that at evening time it shall be light." Zech.14:4-7.

These are a few references to the coming wrath of God upon all ungodliness. God's timing is exactly at the right time, when the cup of iniquity is full. These references deal with the climax in the great tribulation, the coming of the Lord in his battle array, and the delivering of Jerusalem from the hands of the enemies. An amazing feature "In That Day" will be the separating of the Mount of Olives, east and west, and the division of the mount north and south, forming a canal from the great sea to Jerusalem. These are amazing predictions by God the Holy Spirit, as to important events to take place in the Middle East.

B. THE TERROR OF THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION.

Make no mistake about the timing of this terrible period upon planet earth during the great tribulation. God has spelled it out exactly for us to know the times and the seasons, as well as the sign of Hell breaking loose upon this earth. We must go back to prophecy about the great heavenly battle which is to be fought during the tribulation. The evil forces, led by Satan will establish a one world government under that wicked dictator. "The First Beast". (Rev.13:1-10.) He will have limited power in the first three and one half years of the great tribulation. He will be forced to make some sort of a 7 year covenant with Israel. The false prophet of Israel convinces his people (the Jews), to make this pact with him. ("The Second Beast." Rev.13:11-18.) The saying will go forth regarding this world dictator, "Who is like unto the beast? Who is able to make war with him?" Rev.13:4b. So, let us turn to Isaiah 14:12. "How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning? How art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!" This was given by the Holy Spirit as well advanced prophecy. This will be fulfilled during the latter half of the great tribulation, which is called the Abomination of Desolation.

THE HEAVENLY BATTLE AGAINST THE DRAGON

A great battle will take place in heaven as Michael the archangel and his armies fight against Satan and his demons. "And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon: and the dragon fought and his angels, and prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven." Rev.9:7-8. Satan that dragon and serpent could not accuse the brethren any longer in heaven. (Rev.12:10.) Up until this time in prophecy, Satan has access, in heaven and on earth, to accuse the saints and to work his evil deeds. But when he falls from heaven with all of his demons, he will join forces with the evil world against God's people. "Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth

and of the sea! For the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.....and the dragon was angry with the woman (Israel), and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, who keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ." Rev.12:12-17.

THE LAST HALF OF THE GREAT TRIBULATION.

This casting out from heaven of Satan to this earth will take place in the middle of the great tribulation. What proof do we have for this? It will spark off "The Abomination of Desolation" spoken of by Daniel and confirmed by Christ. (Dan.9:27; Matt.24:15.) Please note this statement, "And he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week (7 years) and in the midst of the week (3 & 1/2 years) he shall cause the sacrifice and oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of "Abominations" he shall make it "Desolate", even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the "Desolate". Dan.9:27.

It will be then that the beast of a world dictator will have extreme power over all flesh, as Satan, that devil and serpent is cast out of heaven. He is given the key to the bottomless pit, and from there will come forth more re-enforcements from the demonic world. "And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth; and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit. And he opened the bottomless pit, and there arose a smoke out of the pit, like the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit. And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth, and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power. And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree, but only those men who have not the seal of God in their foreheads. (Rev.7:3; Rev.14:1; Rev.22:4.) And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five months: and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when he striketh a man." Rev.9:1-5. This will be a special assignment under the sovereignty of God, but we can read further concerning this king over the demons, whose name is Abaddon in Hebrew, Apollyon in Greek and Destroyer in English. (Rev.9:11.) This king of the demons will possess the beast, or dictator of the world, and give him added power, even to being healed from a fatal wound. "And I saw one of his heads (The beast) as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is able to make war with him?" Rev.13:3-4. This wound was by the sword, but the beast was healed by demonic power and lived. (Rev.13:14.)

There is another important factor about this terrible beast and that is the added power which will be given him from the demonic evil powers. Moses and Elijah will witness during the three and one half years of "The Abomination of Desolation". This is further verified as to the length of time."And I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and threescore days, clothed in sackcloth." Rev.11:3. These two witnesses can only be Moses and Elijah returned to earth, as their previous ministry is mentioned. (Rev.11:6.) "And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast that ascended out of the bottomless pit shall make war against them (Moses and Elijah), and shall overcome them and kill them." (Rev.11:7.)

To give additional information as to the length of this Abomination of Desolation, we also read, "And there was given unto him (the beast) a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months." (This equals three and one half years) This will conclude the length of the great tribulation and will also complete "The Seventy Times Seven" revealed to Daniel by the angel Gabriel.

THE MARK OF THE BEAST.

During this "Abomination of Desolation", there will be separate identifications given to mankind. God will protect the remnant tribulation saints with his name upon their foreheads. (Rev.7:3; Rev.14:1.) We will discuss this special mark later on. However, as we deal with this terrible last half of the great tribulation, we desire to show the ultimatum that the beast will give to all of his subjects. "And he caused all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is six hundred three score and six." Rev.13:16-18. This false prophet or beast, from Israel, whom we can call the anti-Christ, will have great power among his people. "And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth (Middle East); and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose wound was healed. And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men. And he deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed." Rev.13:11-15.

THE CONSEQUENCES BEFORE GOD OF THE MARK OF THE BEAST.

"And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, the same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb." Rev.14:9-10. The identification through the mark of the beast will be as a mark for permission to do business in this new order of a one world government. If any refuse, they will be unemployed and desolate. However, those who have the mark of the beast will suffer, as the wrath of God is poured out upon them. Those with the mark of Jehovah will have a special protection from God. Some will flee to the mountains where they will be protected and provided for by Almighty God. Others as the 144,000 will be faced with starvation, but being called of God to preach the Gospel of the Kingdom, will be God's witness until death.

THE FIRST VIAL OF GOD'S WRATH.

"And the first angel went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and upon them which worshipped his image." Rev.16:2. God continually pours out his wrath upon all the worshippers of the Beast. What these sores will be like, we do not know. They may be in the form of boils, rash or some other blood disease.

THE SECOND VIAL OF GOD'S WRATH.

"And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea; and it became as the blood of a dead man: and every living soul died in the sea." Rev.16:3. This will create a terrible stench throughout the whole world. There will be no beaches fit to go to and swimming will be out of the question. The pollution will be terrible and of course diseases and sicknesses of all sorts will occur. Everywhere throughout the world there will be the smell of open sewage beyond description.

THE THIRD VIAL OF GOD'S WRATH.

"And the third angel poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters; and they became blood. And I heard the angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shall be, because thou hast judged thus. For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink; for they are worthy." Rev.16:4-6. This is in retaliation upon the subjects of the Beast for their treatment of the tribulation saints of God. All of the drinking water will be as blood. This great tribulation will be filled with the judgements from God, against the enemies of God.

THE FOURTH VIAL OF GOD'S WRATH.

"And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun; and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire. And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they repented not to give him glory." Rev.16:8-9. The increase in the heat from the sun will leave a scorched earth policy and it will be very difficult for the subjects of the Beast to be outside. The results of all this, will not bring repentance but rather a hardening of their hearts against God.

THE FIFTH VIAL OF GOD'S WRATH.

"And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness; and they gnawed their tongues for pain. And blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds." Rev.16:10-11. There is little that the Beast in his seat of authority can do with this extreme darkness. The darkness will be so terrible that it will cause terrible pain and the breaking out of sores. Instead of repenting, they will blaspheme the God of heaven and refuse to repent of their wickedness.

THE SIXTH VIAL OF GOD'S WRATH

"And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared." Rev.16:12. The Euphrates is an important river in storing up the wrath of God. There are the demons that are under the river, waiting to be released, and now the water itself will disappear. This will cause the kings of the East to move across into the Middle East. It will be one of the ways in which Almighty God will bring the nations of the world into the battleground. God in His omniscience relates these things to us, to give us confidence in the truth of the Word of God. There will be a great drought when this river dries up and many will die. The kings or rulers of the East will be made up of China, India, and the smaller nations. Israel will be surrounded by many nations, **BUT GOD** will deliver them in the fullness of time.

THE TRIBULATION SAINTS PROTECTED BY GOD'S SEAL.

Prior to that command from the beast to issue all peoples of the earth their identity mark so that they may buy and sell and be kept from the beast's punishment, God in his sovereignty will give to the remnant tribulation saints the mark of Jehovah. God's chosen vessels will suffer under the beast, but they will have special protection from God, as the wrath of the Almighty is poured upon the subjects of the beast. But they will have to endure many difficulties under this one world government of Satan. However, there will be some who will have, perhaps, private water supply and access to food, and who will give to God's servants. They will receive special recognition from Christ as he judges all nations at the beginning of his reign of righteousness. This will be when the Son of man comes to establish the millennial kingdom. "When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats.....Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: For I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat; I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink; I was a stranger, and ye took me in: Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered..... And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me." Matt.25:31-40.

This is often misquoted as an immediate application to our present day, but it actually refers to those who help maintain God's remnant tribulation saints which received the name of Jehovah. These tribulation saints will not suffer under the wrath of God which will be poured out during the tribulation.

C. THE DECEIT OF THE SATANIC REIGN

The reign of terror upon the face of the earth, under the two beasts, is described by Christ as the most terrible time of all ages. "For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days

should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened." Matt.24:21-22. Satan will realize that his days are numbered, and will infiltrate every phase of the human life. He will have billions of demons to do his evil deeds, and, especially, he will persecute the Jews. But God in his omniscience will have a place of refuge for those around Jerusalem to flee. (Matt.24:15-20; Mk.13:14-23.) God has given us a clue of some of these events to take place during the tribulation in Revelation chapter six.

THE WHITE HORSE

Satan deceives the inhabitants of the earth with the beast riding a white horse and bringing in a false peace. He will move throughout the whole world, establishing his blasphemous world government. The nations of the world will fall before his domain.

THE RED HORSE

However, we see a red horse to follow, which is a declaration of universal war. This period of time, during the tribulation, will bring chaotic conditions throughout the whole world, destroy every sign of peace, and cause the people to betray one another for gain, with a great slaughter of human life. The beast will be given great power, ruling by the use of weapons.

THE BLACK HORSE

The black horse signifies famine along with a scarcity of food. With war raging throughout the whole world, the planting of gardens and the raising of food would be very limited. This would send the price of all commodities very high. For only a small amount of flour, it will take a day's wage. Cooking oil will be sold in small quantities.

THE PALE HORSE

The pale horse is of death and torture, as in Hell. Over a billion people will die at one time due to the wrath of the beast. There will be much greed and encouraged killing for gain. Hunger will take its toll as well. Thieving will be world wide because of the scarcity of food. This will weaken all individual nations, and it will be very easy for the beast to take control of all food. "Who is like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?" (Rev.13:4b.) No man will be able to buy or sell without the identity of the beast. (Rev.13:17.)

The seals shall be opened, the trumpets will sound, and the vials will be poured out upon planet earth. All is controlled by the sovereignty of God. Nothing will take place apart from the permission of God. This is the final outpouring of the evil forces, and God will bring them all to a sudden end in the fullness of God's time-table. As you read Revelation from chapter six through chapter eighteen, you will understand both the total depravity of mankind, as well as the great onslaught of the demonic world. The entire inhabited earth will be affected by this great upheaval. The satanic stand with most of the demons in his control will bring misery and death to planet earth.

II. BEHOLDING THE HEAVENS OPEN.

THE WHITE HORSE OF THE ETERNAL GOD.

"And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word Of God." Rev.19:11-12.

This will be a glorious sight, as the Creator himself comes down to claim the earth as part of his great domain. Although it is not necessary for anyone to fight for the Lord, yet these great heavenly armies will follow him, filling the sky with the glory of God. We, as the newly married bride of Christ will be there with those approaching multitudes of angels, and we will behold our Lord Jesus Christ challenge the godless armies of Satan.

The armies of God will take their position, as the Lord of glory meets the foe single-handed. "And the armies that were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean." Rev.19:14. There will be no need for the armies of angels or for the saints to soil their fine clothing, for the Lord himself will defeat the enemies. "For as the lightening cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be." Matt.24:27. "Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heaven shall be shaken: And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory." Matt.24:29-30. "And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, and with it he should smite the nations, and he shall rule them with a rod of iron; and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God. And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, King of kings, and Lord of lords." Rev.19:15-16.

III. THE BATTLE OF ARMAGEDDON.

GREAT WILL BE THE DESTRUCTION AGAINST GOD'S ENEMIES.

"And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God, that ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses and them that sit upon them, and the flesh of all men, both free and enslaved, both small and great. And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army. And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone. And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth; all the fowls were filled with their flesh." Rev.19:17-21.

This battle will last but a short time, by the powerful words and might of Christ Jesus the Divine warrior. As in the days of Joshua, so the Lord again will show his mighty power. (Josh.4:13-15.) These armies from the nations of the world will all gather together as a united world empire under the authority of the two beasts. There will be individual nations during that day of Armageddon, but they will be subservient to the two beasts, and therefore under demonic power. They will not stand before the great white throne, but will be cast immediately into the eternal lake of fire and brimstone. This indicates that it will be a place of continual burning lava, as some have seen when a volcano erupts. (Rev.19:20.)

IV. CHRIST THE VICTOR.

A THOUSAND YEAR PRISON SENTENCE FOR SATAN.

"And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, and cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled; and after that he must be loosed for a little season." Rev.20:1-3. There will be a thousand years that the earthly people will be free from the temptations of the Devil and his demons. We do not have information about these demons, but the Word does tell us that the nations will not be deceived during the kingdom reign of Christ.

Prior to the reign of Christ, there will be a free-for-all looting and destruction of private property. During the great tribulation, there will be those from Judah and Jerusalem who will flee to the mountains for refuge, which God will prepare for them. (Matt.24:15-20; Mk.13:14-18; Lk.21:20-23.) They will be aware of the great battle of Armageddon and will have special protection during that terrible destruction. But those who remain in Jerusalem and the surrounding cities will face a terrible terrorist attack. "And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem the spirit of grace and supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for his firstborn." Zech.12:10. "Behold the day of the Lord cometh, and thy spoil shall be divided in the midst of thee. For I will gather all nations against Jerusalem to battle; and the city shall be taken, and the houses rifled, and the women ravished; and half of the city shall go forth into captivity, and the residue of the people shall not be cut off from the city. Then shall the Lord go forth, and fight against those nations, as when he fought in the city of battle." Zech.14:1-3. I repeat this portion for a very specific purpose, and that is, that just before the Lord returns to set up his kingdom of righteousness, there will be chaos everywhere, just like there will be when the Lord comes in the clouds to rapture home the saints. There will be a tremendous renovation necessary when the Lord sets up his kingdom, and being the Creator, He will restore nature to its original creation. There will immediately be sufficient food for the whole world. "And the Lord shall be king over all the earth; in that day shall there be one Lord, and his name one. All the land shall be turned as a plain from Geba to Rimmon south of Jerusalem: and it shall be lifted up, and inhabited in her place, from Benjamin's gate unto the place of the first gate, unto the corner gate, and from the tower of Hananeel unto the king's winepresses. And men shall dwell in it, and there shall be no more

utter destruction; but Jerusalem shall be safely inhabited." Zech.14:9-11. This will follow that terrible battle of Armageddon, when the Lord himself will conquer the whole world and rule it continuously for the thousand years. Christ the Mighty Warrior will accomplish his mission single handed to the praise and glory of the Triune God. The Messiah's first appearance was in meekness and submission, but in "That Day" he will pour out his wrath upon the ungodly.

Daniel heard information concerning the length of time that "The Abomination of Desolation" would be. "Then I heard one saint speaking, and another saint said unto that certain saint who spoke, How long shall be the vision concerning the daily sacrifice, and the transgression of desolation, to give both the sanctuary and the host to be trampled under foot? And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed." Dan.8:13-14. This is very interesting and enlightening to us regarding the saints that are already in heaven. There are Bible classes going on in heaven, as this is another example of Biblical questions being answered. You will note a difference in the number of days in this portion and the number of days in the following. Again, we face questions being asked by heavenly creatures. "Then I, Daniel, looked and behold, there stood two others, the one on this side of the bank of the river, and the other on that side of the bank of the river. And one said to the man clothed in linen, who was above the waters of the river, How long shall it be to the end of these wonders?" Dan.12:5-6. As you will read through this portion to verse 13, one discovers that there are three ways of expressing the time at the end of the tribulation: "Time, times and one half", "One thousand two hundred and ninety days" and, finally, "One thousand three hundred and thirty five days". This was indeed puzzling to Daniel, and rightly so. Figuring 360 days as a Biblical year:

1. Time, times and one half = three and one half years.(Dan.12:7.)
2. One thousand two hundred and ninety days = three and one half years, plus 30 days for purification of the temple. (Dan.12:11.)
3. Two thousand three hundred days = this period of time was completed under the persecution of Antiochus Epiphanes. (Dan.8:13-14.)
4. One thousand three hundred and thirty five days = three and one half years and seventy five days. The additional 75 days should not be a problem to us considering the construction and cleansing needed to set up Christ's kingdom of righteousness. (Dan.12:12.)

CONCLUSION

The Satanic power will be crushed by our Mighty Warrior, the Lord Jesus Christ, and there will be great fierceness of the wrath of God poured out upon the ungodly. These time periods for the cleansing of the temple and the renovation for the kingdom will be necessary. We can praise God that the power of Satan will be brought to an end for those thousand years. That great chain, brought down from heaven, will bind Satan and will make sure that he continually falls into a pit without a bottom. Although he is the prince of the power of the air

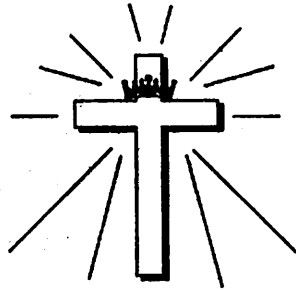
and the greatest creature God has created, he is still controlled by the sovereignty of God Almighty. It will take the Eternal Son of God to bring victory over all evil forces. Sin and death were judged at the cross. With so great salvation through the Lord Jesus Christ, the penalty for sin was paid, and the grace of God was manifested. All mankind is under the curse of sin and all have come short of the glory of God. We are reminded, "For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places." Eph.6:12. The struggle against the world, the flesh, and the devil will continue until that Mighty Warrior comes down from heaven, manifesting the fierceness of the wrath of God against all evil forces.

QUESTIONS CHAPTER SIX

- 1. What is the purpose of the final struggle against the evil forces?**
- 2. When does "The Abomination Of Desolation" Begin?**
- 3. Why is Satan against Israel?**
- 4. When will Satan be cast out of Heaven? By whom will he be cast out? Cite Scripture please.**
- 5. Where will Satan's last stand be against God?**
- 6. To what does Psalm 2; and Isaiah 40:10 refer?**
- 7. Explain Daniel 9:27; Daniel 7:9; Zechariah 12:1-3.**
- 8. Where will Christ first touch down upon this earth when he comes to establish his kingdom?**
- 9. What will happen to this place when Christ descends upon the earth? Quote Scripture.**
- 10. Describe some important factors about "The Abomination Of Desolation". Give Scripture.**
- 11. Write briefly about the heavenly battle to take place. Quote Scripture.**
- 12. Why is the last half of the tribulation so much more terrible than the first? Matt.24:21.**
- 13. Explain the seal of God and the mark of the beast. Which is placed first?**
- 14. What consequences will people suffer because of the mark of the beast?**

- 15. What advantage and disadvantage do those have who receive the seal of God?**
- 16. Explain the meaning of the four horses of Revelation chapter six.**
- 17. Write briefly on Revelation 19:11-21.**
- 18. Write briefly on the subject, "The Battle Of Armageddon.**
- 19. What two evil creatures do not stand before the great white throne? What happens to them? Give Scripture.**
- 20. What is the purpose, or reason for the different number of days mentioned in Daniel? Daniel 8:13-14; Daniel 12:7-11.**
- 21. Write briefly on Christ the Mighty Warrior.**

CHAPTER SEVEN



**Christ
the
King of Kings
and
Lord of Lords**

CHAPTER SEVEN

CHRIST

THE KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS

INTRODUCTION

The battle against the evil forces will be settled in due time and the Lord Jesus Christ will set up his righteous kingdom throughout the whole world. The goats will be separated from the sheep and will be destroyed, awaiting the second resurrection, while the kingdom of righteousness throughout the whole world will be established and secured by Almighty God. The assignment to rule with Christ will be allotted to the saints according to their faithfulness, while in their natural body. All power and authority will be in the hands of the Lord Jesus Christ, as he will rule with a rod of iron. May we consider this great reign in righteousness in the following divisions.

- I. SEPARATING THE SHEEP FROM THE GOATS.**
- II. THE RENOVATION AND THE RESTORATION OF NATURE.**
- III. ESTABLISHING THE REIGN OF RIGHTEOUSNESS.**
- IV. BRINGING IN THE ETERNAL KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS.**

-
- I. SEPARATING THE SHEEP FROM THE GOATS.**

INTRODUCTION

When one considers the Master Plan of Almighty God, we marvel at the detail in which he has revealed these truths to Bible believers, well in advance. There is no excuse whatsoever for anyone not knowing what the future holds. It is the unbelief of millions, who desire to go their own way and get lost in the confusion of life. We will be discussing just a few of the many separations which are made by the Living God. Dear student of the Bible, search out God's wonderful truths, so that you might have both knowledge of the things to come, and also confidence in the Eternal Son of God, the Creator of all things. "For we are not as many, who corrupt the word of God; but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speak we in Christ." 2 Cor.2:17. "Wherefore, come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, and will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

A. BIBLICAL SEPARATION

From Genesis to the Book of Revelation, you will discover that God is constantly separating right from wrong. Let us just take a few examples from the Word of God to show the various methods that God had and what his purpose was in these various separations. May we also remember that God is not a respecter of persons, but rather a respecter of character. Since he knows our every thought, word and deed, and knows the end from the beginning, we can rest assured that we serve a righteous and just God.

ENOCH

Enoch who was the seventh generation from Adam, is an outstanding example of God's separation. It was in a day when men refused to call upon God and Enoch was an exceptional righteous man. God was mindful of this outstanding person and would come and walk in the cool of the evening with Enoch as he did with Adam. After most of the 365 years of life, while walking with God, he was called to gloryland. "And Enoch walked with God, and he was not; for God took him." Gen.5:24. God evidently talked of things to come and how, one day he was going to establish a kingdom of righteousness upon this earth. We do not have but a few sentences of Enoch's writings, but they reveal, the coming of the Lord with his saints. "And Enoch also the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints, to execute judgement upon all, and to convict all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him". Jude 14-15.

NOAH

Noah and part of his family, consisting of eight souls were separated out from that world wide flood, which came upon the wicked. The ungodly people had sufficient years to repent, as Noah and his sons built the ark, but they rejected the warnings of God. "But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord." Gen.6:8.

SHEM

Of the three sons of Noah, Shem is chosen to shield the birth rite of the coming Messiah. God gave him 500 years of life, multiplying his seed in a bountiful way. (Gen.11:10-11.)

ABRAM

With the separation and choice of Abram, God begins to narrow down the Messianic lineage, calling himself, "The God of Abraham, The God of Isaac, and The God of Jacob. This may seem to be a respecter of persons, but on the contrary, God was respecting his promise. This time a land was being allocated to Abraham's seed, with an unconditional covenant. (Gen.15:1-18; Heb.6:16-17.)

JACOB AND THE NATION ISRAEL.

"When the Most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when he separated the sons of Adam, he set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel." Deut.32:8. A nation was to be born, with trials and discipline, for the preserving of a great conquest and destiny of the righteousness of the Eternal Godhead. This separating of the nation Israel was legalized by God in giving them the title deed to the Middle East from the Euphrates river to the land of Goshen, by the river Egypt. It was promised to the seed of Abraham, with an unconditional covenant. Though Israel is not occupying the entire land now, she will occupy it when their Eternal King arrives on that Mount of Olives, he will completely establish Israel back in their undivided land.

THE TRIBE OF JUDAH.

"Judah, thou art he whom thy brethren shall praise: thy hand shall be in the neck of thine enemies; thy father's children shall bow down before thee. Judah is a lion's whelp: from the prey, my son, thou art gone up: he stooped down, he crouched as a lion, and as an old lion. Who shall rouse him up? The scepter shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be. Binding his foal unto the vine, and his ass's colt unto the choice vine, he washed his garments in wine, and his clothes in the blood of grapes. His eyes shall be red with wine, and his teeth white with milk." Gen.49:8-12. This portion of prophecy concerning Judah, gives us information on the kingly position that this tribe would have, through which the Lord Jesus Christ would come and reign upon this earth. It is amazing, how the Holy Spirit gave Jacob such insight of the coming of the Lord, as Savior in meekness as well as the King of kings and Lord of lords, with flaming eyes pouring out the wrath of God upon the ungodly. "Until Shiloh comes", the coming of the one who will establish the kingdom of righteousness forever.

KING DAVID

"And thine house and thy kingdom shall be established forever before thee; thy throne shall be established forever." 2 Sam.7:16 The separation, fulfilling God's Master plan, unfolds to the very ruling factor through the lineage of king David. Here is what David prayed. "For thou hast confirmed to thy self thy people. Israel, to be a people unto thee forever; and thou, Lord, art become their God. And now, O Lord God, the word that thou hast spoken concerning thy servant, and concerning his house, establish it forever, and do as thou hast said. And let thy name be magnified forever, saying, The Lord of hosts is the God over Israel; and let the house of thy servant, David, be established before thee. For thou, O Lord of hosts, God of Israel, hast revealed to thy servant, saying, I will build thee an house; therefore hath thy servant found in his heart to pray this prayer unto thee. And now, O Lord God, thou art that God, and thy words are true, and thou hast promised this goodness unto thy servant; Therefore, now, let it please thee to bless the house of thy servant, that it may continue forever before thee; for thou, O Lord God, hast spoken it; and with thy blessing let the house of thy servant be blessed forever." 2 Sam.7:24-29. (1 Chron.17:11-13; 1 Ki.8:23; 1 Ki.9:5.)

ELIMELECH'S POSTERITY RESTORED THROUGH RUTH AND BOAZ.

This is another example of the mighty working power of God. The wisdom of God is beyond his creature's understanding. Ruth was separated from her land of Moab, with a specific purpose and Master Plan of God! Boaz became the kinsman redeemer, redeeming the rights of the family of Elimelech, maintaining the Messianic promise by Almighty God.

QUEEN ESTHER

God's providential care, regarding his promises and his choice of lineage for the coming of his Eternal Son, was established in eternity past and there never is a need to alter or change. Since Judah was the separated tribe for the Messiah, satan would do all he could under the sovereignty of God to destroy it. BUT GOD, in his omniscience is always prepared and causes the wrath of man to be subjected to the glory of God. Had the law of the Medes and Persians been carried out, the whole tribe of Judah would have been massacred. God used Queen Esther to save the Davidic lineage, protecting the unconditional covenant made with king David. (1 Chron.17:11-13; 1 Ki.8:23; 1 Ki.9:5.1 Chron.2:19-7:10.)

MARY THE VIRGIN, THE CHOSEN VESSEL.

"And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary; for thou hast found favor with God. And, Behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a Son, and shalt call his name JESUS. He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the highest; and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David. And he shall reign over the house of Jacob forever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end. Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know no man? And the angel answered her, The Holy Spirit shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee; therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God." Lk.1:30-35. This was in fulfillment of Gen.3:15; Isa.7:14; Isa.9:6-7; Gal.4:4-5. It was God the Father's way of having his Eternal Son enter into this world to become the Redeemer as the King of kings and Lord of lords. That body, however was prepared before the foundation of the world. "Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you." 1 Pet.1:20.

THE SEPARATED LIFE OF THE CHRISTIANS.

"Wherefore, come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, and will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. Having, therefore, these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God." 2 Cor.6:17-7:1. The Lord has set us apart from this whole world system and desires to show us his perfect will for our lives, as saints of God. "And be not conformed to this world, but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God." "For our citizenship is in heaven, from where also we look for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall change our lowly body, that it may be

fashioned like his glorious body, according to the working by which he is able even to subdue all things unto himself, Therefore, my brethren dearly beloved and longed for, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearly beloved." Phil.3:20-4:1.

As Paul the Apostle was separated unto the Gospel (Rom.1:1.), so we are separated unto the Lord to proclaim the Gospel, and fulfilling that great and mighty commission, "Go ye, therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you;and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the age. Amen." Matt.28:19-20.. This separation also will keep us conformed to the image of God. "Wherefore, he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them, for such an high priest was fitting for us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens;" Heb.7:25-26.

Our separation as unto the Lord gives us an eternal security, that never fades away! "What shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us. For I am persuaded that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creation, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, in Christ Jesus, our Lord." Rom.8:35-39. Praise God, we have already been separated unto God and look forward to that day when we shall be in his very presence, beholding the Eternal Son of God.

B. SEPARATION BY THE JUDGEMENT OF THE ETERNAL SON OF GOD.

As Christ the King of kings and Lord of lords defeats the enemies at the battle of Armageddon, there are several renovations and restorations to be made. We will deal with those in the course of time. But, as the battle comes to a quick close, by the word from the King of kings and Lord of lords, the earthly subjects of the kingdom of righteousness must be separated from the ungodly. The sheep of the kingdom need to be gathered, while the goats which served the evil forces, need to be destroyed. "When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory. And before him shall be gathered all the nations; and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats. And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world;.....Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels." Matt.25:31-41. This is not a scene of the Great White Throne judgement, but an event that will take place at the beginning of the thousand year kingdom of righteousness. It will be as illustrated in so many of the parables which the Lord taught during his earthly ministry concerning the Kingdom of heaven.

When the Lord begins his thousand year reign upon the earth at the time of his second advent, he will make this world wide separation and purification. Those who will be identified as the sheep, will be earthy people and will continue to live upon the earth during the thousand year reign of Christ. They will not be clothed in a glorified body, as we who descend with

Christ, to set up the kingdom. They will continue to bear children in abundance, which we will discuss later on. They will still have the depraved nature of human beings, but without the continual temptation of the Devil, who will be imprisoned in the bottomless pit. (Rev.20:1-3.) These earthly people called "sheep" will be taught the Word of God by the saints of all generations.

The goats will have their life taken from them and remain in Hades, until the second resurrection, when they will have their final judgement of the lake of fire, before the Great White Throne. This will cause the King of kings and Lord of lords to begin a wonderful kingdom of righteousness. Many of those who will be listed as goats, will have the mark of the beast in clear view, which cannot be disguised or removed. These goats shall be removed from the earth at the beginning of the reign of Christ. The Lord has given this revelation, especially for those who will be left behind, when the saints of all ages are "Caught Up" to their heavenly abode. It is a warning to all who will pass through the tribulation, to avoid receiving the mark of the beast.

II. THE RENOVATION AND THE RESTORATION OF NATURE.

We have briefly mentioned, prior to this as to the differences in the number of days mentioned as to the closing of the second part of the great tribulation, better known as "The Abomination of Desolation". When the kingdom of righteousness is being set up, there will be some renovation and clearing of debris, to take place. This will account for those added days spoken of in Daniel chapter twelve. There will be a world wide clean up time, with great reclamation as well as cultivation. One of the outstanding events to take place will be, the restoration of all of nature. We also have some information from the Bible as to the building of the temple, which may take place at the beginning of the great tribulation. This is obvious from the fact that Israel will be allowed to have her temple worship and oblations. Israel has an enlarged synagogue in Jerusalem, that can be converted into a temple. This would be in accordance with temple worship being granted to Israel. However, this will be taken away from them during The Abomination of Desolation. (Dan.9:27.) Christ, the King of kings and Lord of lords, will restore temple worship, when he reigns. Zech.8:1-8; Also note, "And speak unto him, saying, Thus speaketh the Lord of hosts: saying, Behold, the man whose name is THE BRANCH; and he shall grow up out of his place, and he shall build the temple of the Lord; Even he shall build the temple of the Lord; and he shall bear the glory, and shall sit and rule upon his throne; and he shall be a priest upon his throne; and the counsel of peace shall be between them both." Zech.6:12-13. This will be the authority of God, making his Eternal Son, Prophet, Priest and King, after the order of Melchizedek. "For he testifieth, Thou art a priest forever after the order of Melchizedek." Heb.7:17. May we now briefly mention some of the changes that will take place during the time that the Lord restores nature. -

1. Perfect planting conditions with fertile soil. (Rom.8:19-22.)
2. No thorns or thistles to deal with in the planting for the conditions will be perfect. (Isa.11:6-9; Isa.35:1-2; Isa.65:25.)

3. There will be an abundance of food, with no poverty. (Ps.72:7 & 16; also the whole chapter of Isaiah 65.)
4. The life span of the earthy people will be extended, and there will be no diseases. (The only death will be by accident, extreme age, or capital punishment) (Isa.65:20; Isa.11:36; Exod.21:12.)
5. The earth will be restored to it's perfect axis. (This is understood in the restoration of nature.)
6. With the saints of all ages teaching the righteousness of God, the whole earth will be evangelized in every generation. (Isa.65:24.)
7. Life of all earthly people will be extended as in the early days of man upon this earth. (Isa.65:20; Isa.11:3-4.)
8. Individual earth dwellers will not be tempted by satan, as he will be in the bottomless pit during the kingdom age. (Rev.20:1-3.)
9. There will be a perfect government set up throughout the whole world, and the saints of all ages will be the governmental staff under Christ. (Zech.14:9; Ps.72; Isa.11:1-2.)

III. ESTABLISHING THE REIGN OF RIGHTEOUSNESS.

- A. THE PROPHECY OF HIS COMING.**
- B. THE CONDITIONS OF THE WORLD AT HIS COMING.**
- C. THE REASON FOR HIS COMING**

A. THE PROPHECY OF HIS COMING.

The Lord Jesus Christ is unique in preparing the way of his coming as the King of kings and Lord of lords. The prophets, kings and priests of the Old Testament cannot compare with the Eternal Son of God. The Lord Jesus Christ, because of his eternal status, could say, "I will come again". Christ also could claim, "I am the resurrection and the life". The Eternal Son could also say, "I am Alpha and Omega", the beginning and the end. Christ could also say, "All things were created by me, and without me, nothing was created". That is why we can turn to the prophetic word of God and claim the promises from the Bible that the Eternal Son of God will return, according to the prophetic records.

The Lord has fulfilled his entrance into this world as the seed of the woman, using the conception through the Holy Spirit. He was rejected by Israel, postponing the kingdom of righteousness until a later time. The rapture of the Saints, must take place before the Lord comes

to set up his kingdom. He will come with all of his saints, according to first Thessalonians chapter three verse thirteen. Let us search the Scripture for evidence of Christ's coming, to set up the kingdom.

God who separated the nations according to the number of the children of Israel, has also separated the tribes of Israel, for the purpose of the Messianic hope. "And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, who shall stand for an ensign of the peoples; to him shall the nations seek, and his rest shall be glorious. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the Lord shall set his hand again the second time to recover the remnant of his people, who shall be left, from Assyria, and from Egypt, and from Pathros, and from Cush, and from Elam, and from Shinar, and from Hamath, and from the coast lands of the sea. And he shall set up an ensign for the nations, and shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth." Isa.11:10-12. This is a very important prophetic declaration, as to the coming kingdom of Almighty God. This will be the second time that the Eternal Son of God tries to gather Israel for the kingdom. The first time the Lord was rejected, but this second time the Lord will do it with a rod of iron and with a display of his mighty power. For further information about what the Bible says , concerning the second advent of the Lord read the following. Isaiah 35; Isaiah 40; Isaiah. 54, and Isaiah 60; Jeremiah 32:36-44; Jeremiah 33 to 40. This has been God's plan and preparations before the foundation of the world, and before time was an issue. "Now therefore, so shalt thou say unto my servant, David. Thus saith the Lord of hosts, I took thee from the shepcote, from following the sheep, to be ruler over my people, over Israel; and I was with thee wheresoever thou wentest, and have cut off all thine enemies out of thy sight, and have made thee a great name, like unto the name of the great men who are in the earth.....And thine house and kingdom shall be established forever before thee; thy throne shall be established forever." 2 Sam.7:8-16.

The establishment of the eternal kingdom of God through the lineage of David is predicted throughout the Bible. The kingdom to come has often been put into song, through the psalms as in Psalm 89:18-37. God has not cast off his people, but at this very time in the history of mankind, God is regathering his people back in a small portion of their land. There are many places in the Old Testament where the coming king and the Messiah are mentioned. May we conclude this brief survey, with a very specific portion of prophecy, relating to the very Eternal Son of God, as fulfilling God's unconditional covenant with David. "For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given, and the government shall be upon his shoulder; and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The Mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with justice and with righteousness from henceforth even forever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this." Isa.9:6-7.

"And behold, an angel who talked with me went forth, and another angel went to meet him, and said unto him, Run, speak to this young man, saying, Jerusalem shall be inhabited like towns without walls for the multitude of men and cattle in it. For I, saith the Lord, will be unto it a wall of fire round about, and will be the glory in the midst of it." Zech.2:3-5. The coming of the Lord will be with great power and glory. This thousand year kingdom of righteousness will be the final stage before the final judgement upon all unregenerate from all ages.

B. THE CONDITIONS OF THE WORLD AT HIS COMING.

One of the great signs of the nearness of the coming of the Lord, is the return of Israel to their land, under the most difficult situations. The Arab world with their great control of that necessary oil, is causing a great upset in the development of the restored nation of Israel. It would be absolutely impossible for the migration of the Jews back in their own land, if the Lord was not doing it. The Jewish clock has been silent for almost two thousand years, and it is about to begin ticking again. This cannot happen until the church of the mystery age is taken out of the way. That will occur when Christ returns to rapture home his future bride and the bridegroom friends of the Old Testament. Then the completion of the final week of the prophecy of Daniel will begin with that great tribulation.

As we have discussed previously of the conditions in the world, being at a low spiritual ebb, with the worship of demonism, religions of false doctrines, rejection of Biblical principles and a world of Sodom and Gomorrah, we know that the evil forces are mustering all that they can to prepare the way of a one world government, under Satan. This all will be preliminary to the coming of the Lord to set up his mighty rule of righteousness upon this earth. Chaotic conditions will exist under the power of that coming Dictator, and Revelation chapter six through eighteen describes it thoroughly. Read also the following. (Matt.24:4-33; Dan.9:24-27; Lk.21:25-26; Lk.21:34-38; Matt.24:37-51.)

C. THE REASON FOR HIS COMING.

The main reason for the coming of the Lord to set up his kingdom, is, "Thus saith the Lord"! The world has been exposed to all sorts of man made solutions to establish a better world to live in, but all has been in vain. Almighty God has been left out of governmental proposals, with man thinking that he can get along without God. This all has failed, and God himself will establish his kingdom of righteousness, in his sovereign rights, giving mankind the final opportunity of turning to the Lord. Under the most favorable conditions that God will provide, there will be a rebellion of depraved man against the righteousness of God. This will be the final test that God will undertake, and that great division between right and wrong will bring in an eternal separation of good and evil. The Satanic power will be destroyed forever and sin and evil will be eternally eradicated from the kingdom of God. (Dan.9:24.)

THE KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS

The kingdom of righteousness will be kept under control "By a Rod of Iron". (Ps.2:9; Rev.2:27; Rev.19:15.) There will be perfect justice for all, under a perfect court of conduct, led by the saints of God. The saints of all ages will be in their glorified bodies, and serving the Lord as a kingdom of priests, throughout the whole world. We will have perfect wisdom from the Lord himself, and be in continual communication with his authority in Jerusalem, the capital of the world. "I saw in the night visions, and, Behold one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of Days, and they brought him near before him. And there was given him dominion and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages should serve him; his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his

kingdom shall not be destroyed. The anticipation of such a kingdom is beyond description, for the glory of Almighty God will be among men, There will be a multitude of angels in heaven, rejoicing to behold that eternal kingdom, started during those thousand years. "And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdom of this world is become the kingdom of our Lord, and of his Christ, and he shall reign forever and ever." Rev.11:15. What a day of rejoicing that will be, when the Creator of the universe will spend one thousand years, governing this world.

GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS SHALL REIGN UPON THIS EARTH.

There will be certain changes in this world, as we already had mentioned concerning the restoration of nature. Now I would like to mention a few of the changes in the political and religious realm. -

1. **There will be perfect righteousness to be enjoyed by all. (Ps.9:8; Isa.11:4-5; Isa.62:2; Dan.9:24.)**
2. **There will be no religions upon the earth, but all worship under Christ. (Rev.20:1-3.)**
3. **There will be a great spirituality during the kingdom age. (Joel 2:28; Isa.65:24; Zech.14:16-17.)**
4. **Israel will be restored to her complete land, as promised. (Isa.35:3-10; Isa.65:19; Zech.8:20-23.)**
5. **There will be perfect peace upon the earth, under strict government. (Isa.2:4.)**
6. **There will be universal knowledge and understanding toward God. (Isa.11:9.)**
7. **There will be a perfect government, under Christ, with the ruling saints of all ages. (Zech.14:9; Isa.11:1-2; Ps.72.)**
8. **There will be perfect administration of justice for all. (Isa.11:3-7; Ps.72:12-14.)**
9. **All unbelievers, classified as goats will be removed by fire. (Matt.25:31-46.)**
10. **The life span of the earthy people will be extended to hundreds of years, with no diseases. The only deaths will be by accidents, extreme age, or justice. (Isa.65:20; Isa.11:3-4.)**

- 11. The people of the earth, during the kingdom age, will bear many children, who will have to choose for themselves to accept God's righteousness or go their own way. (We, the saints of all ages will have our glorified bodies and will be as the angels, neither marry or given in marriage, but will live among the people of the earth.) (Ezek.20:33-49; Matt.25:14-30; Matt.3:11; Lk.3:16.)**

A GLORIOUS KINGDOM AGE

With The Lord Jesus Christ ruling in Jerusalem, the capital of the world, there will be prosperity everywhere. The people of the earth will have the most perfect conditions, since the garden of Eden. The demon world will be bound during the thousand year reign of Christ, but the natural man will still be totally depraved. Under the most favorable conditions, God is giving mankind the final test of obedience to his Creator. The ungodly, from the great tribulation will be destroyed, and the world will be populated with only those who qualified as sheep. (Matt.25:31-46.) However, the children born to these who have qualified to enter the kingdom, will have to make their own decision as to whether they will submit willingly to the authority of the kingdom of righteousness, or inwardly rebel. That is why Christ must rule, "With a Rod of Iron".

The saints of all ages will be deputized to rule throughout the world. We will be a "Kingdom of Priests" as unto the Lord, and not to any religious organizations. "Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? And if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the small matters? Know ye not that we shall judge angels? How much more things pertain to this life?" 1 Cor.6:2-3. Since we will even be judging some of the angels, it certainly behooves us to be well taught in the Bible, while we are passing through this life. We also understand from the Scriptures that the martyrs from the tribulation will also take part in the kingdom. They will be resurrected and finalize the first resurrection with the blessings of God. "And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow servants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled." Rev.6:10-11. These will all be raised and given glorified bodies at the end of the great tribulation and join with us in helping to rule the world in God's perfect righteousness.

The Word of God says, "Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection; on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years." Rev.20:6. This includes all of the tribulation saints that will be martyred during the tribulation. There will be many coming out of the tribulation, who will take heed to the warning of Christ, "Flee to the hills"! These will be among the sheep that will be upon the earth to begin the thousand year reign with the Lord Jesus Christ. Those who will remain faithful to the Lord, during the Millennium, continue to live, after the kingdom, but we are not told about them. However, those who are alive at the end of the thousand years, will need to be changed, but resurrection will not be the issue. The second death is for those of all ages who have rejected God and his provision of a Savior, and will stand before the Great White Throne to be judged and 100% will be cast into the Lake of fire, to remain there forever and

ever. That is why, regardless of what generation human beings were born into, it is of the utmost importance to accept so great salvation, provided by a merciful God.

It will be a great and glorious day, when we hear that trumpet sound, and the coming of the Lord in the air. There will be the heavenly holy angels with him, as well as the saints of all ages. They will reclaim the identifications of their earthly bodies, and we who will be alive and remain shall be changed, in a moment, and in a twinkling of an eye. That great "Air Lift" into the heavenlies for the duration of the great tribulation, will prepare us for the kingdom of righteousness, which will be established upon the earth. We shall have that privilege of teaching all nations the righteousness of God under perfect conditions. Israel will be restored and God will establish his covenant with them. "Hear the word of the Lord, O ye nations, and declare it in the coasts afar off, and say, He who scattered Israel will gather him, and keep him, as a shepherd doth his flock. For the Lord hath redeemed Jacob, and ransomed him from the hand of him who was stronger than he....But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel: After those days, saith the Lord, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts, and will be their God, and they shall be my people. And they shall teach no more every man his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord, for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the Lord; for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more." Jer.31:10-34.

A MIGHTY LORD OF RIGHTEOUSNESS.

The Lord of righteousness, shall allow the nations of the world to gather against Jerusalem, in their greed and jealousy, and then "In That Day", he shall come forth and stand upon the Mount of Olives, with a mighty force. "Behold, the day of the Lord cometh, and thy spoil shall be divided in the midst of thee. For I will gather all nations against Jerusalem to battle; and the city shall be taken, and the houses rifled, and the women ravished; and half of the city shall go forth into captivity, and the residue of the people shall not be cut off from the city. Then shall the Lord go forth, and fight against those nations as when he fought in the day of battle. And his feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem on the east, and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, and there shall be a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south." Zech.14:1-4. This mount of Olives shall split in two as the Lord will arrive "In That Day". There will be a great valley from the Mediterranean to Jerusalem and a new sea port will appear, which will be called, "AZAL". (Zech.14:5.) "In that day", the Lord Jesus Christ will be recognized by the scars received when he was crucified. "And one shall say unto him, What are these wounds in thine hands? Then he shall answer, Those with which I was wounded in the house of my friends." Zech.13:6. This will certainly be proof of the King of kings and Lord of lords, being the same one who was crucified and raised from the grave, during his first advent. These wounds or scars will be present in the Lord's body forever! They will be a constant reminder to all of the saints of the crucifixion of the Lord. They will be the most precious sight in all of heaven, knowing that the Eternal Son of God became both sacrifice and Sacrificer for our sins. While we were dead in trespasses and sins, Christ died on the cross for our sins.

THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS.

"The coming of the King of kings and Lord of lords to set up his kingdom of righteousness, will not be for gathering the Christians, but rather coming with the Christians as the Bride of Christ. All of the Old Testament saints will be coming with Christ as well. Enoch the seventh generation from Adam will be represented as well. (Jude 14-16.) "Behold the days come, saith the Lord, that I will raise unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute justice and righteousness in the earth. In his days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely; and this is his name whereby he shall be called, **THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS**. Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that they shall no more say, The Lord liveth, who brought up the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt; but the Lord liveth, which brought up and which led the seed of the house of Israel out of the north country, and from all countries to which I had driven them, and they shall dwell in their own land." Jer.23:5-8. The same Lord Jesus Christ who led Israel out from Egypt, and through the wilderness, is now in the process of gathering Israel back in their own land

The Book of Zachariah, gives us a glimpse of both advents of the Lord Jesus Christ, plus a reference to Jacob's trouble, during the great tribulation. As the name "Zachariah" means "The Lord Jehovah Remembers", so Almighty God will restore Israel under difficult times. The Lord will become their righteousness. Christ will be their high priest, and advocate as **THE BRANCH**. "Hear now, O Joshua the high priest, thou, and thy fellows that sit before thee: for they are men wondered at: for behold, I will bring forth my servant the **BRANCH**. For behold the stone that I have laid before Joshua; upon one stone shall be seven eyes: behold, I will engrave the graving thereof, saith the Lord of hosts, and I will remove the iniquity of that land in one day." Zech.3:8-9. God will also send forth his witnesses. (Zech.4:11-14; Rev.11:3-12.) Moses and Elijah will herald in this kingdom of righteousness during that great tribulation. Israel will be saved by the coming king and high priest, **THE BRANCH**. (Zech.6:12-13. The king of righteousness will restore both Zion and Jerusalem. "Thus saith the Lord; I am returned unto Zion, and will dwell in the midst of Jerusalem; and Jerusalem shall be called a city of truth; and the mountain of the Lord of hosts the holy mountain." Zech.8:3. In God's righteousness, Israel will be saved. "Thus saith the Lord of hosts; If it be marvelous in the eyes of the remnant of this people in these days, should it also be marvelous in mine eyes? Saith the Lord of hosts. Thus saith the Lord of hosts; Behold, I will save my people from the east country, and from the west country. And I will bring them, and they shall dwell in the midst of Jerusalem: and they shall be my people, and I will be their God, in truth and in righteousness." Zech.8:6-8. (Zech.10:6.)

THE KING IS COMING.

"And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgement was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years." Rev.20:4. These will be the martyred tribulation saints who will enter the kingdom.

THE ROD OF IRON

"And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations; and he shall rule them with a rod of iron; and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God. And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS." Rev.19:15-16. The battle that will precede the entrance of the King of righteousness, has been dealt with in the previous chapter, but we merely want to mention that, after that terrible battle, and the separation of the sheep and goats, Christ will be completely in control of all world affairs. We as a kingdom of priests shall be sent throughout the world, under the authority of Christ, who will be ruling in Jerusalem, with a rod of iron. "Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel." Ps.2:9. There will be many children born during the kingdom age, who will resent the righteousness of God, but will have to be obedient to this perfect government during their life time. The people of the kingdom age will have their own choice in these matters, but will have to suffer the judgement placed upon them. There will be "a little season" in which Satan will be loosed, and those who are still living and rejecting the righteous principles, will be able to join with Satan in rebellion, but suffer the consequences. (Rev.20:3; Rev.20:7-10.)

IV. BRINGING IN THE ETERNAL KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS.

"And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign for ever and ever." Rev.11:15.

This will be the final declaration, when all enemies are defeated and placed into captivity for eternity. There will be no parole or finality to this lake of fire, but it will be forever and ever. Even though Satan is loosed from his temporary confinement, for a little season, his final destination will be the lake of fire and brimstone. The fire that comes down from heaven will destroy the enemies, and prepare for the eternal kingdom of perfect righteousness. In just a brief statement, we have the conclusion of God's battle against the evil forces. "And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison. And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever." Rev.20:7-10. Although the thousand year reign and the eternal kingdom of God is interrupted by that little season granted to Satan, never the less the Sovereignty and eternal reign of God will be established for ever and ever, without sin ever showing it's ugly head again. The final phase of all judgements will be forth coming, when the second resurrection takes place and Christ is seated on the great white throne, to pass the final judgement upon all of the ungodly and unregenerate of all ages. Christ the supreme judge will be seated upon the judgement seat, as the second resurrection takes place. We are again reminded, "But these are written that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God;

and that believing ye might have life through his name." Jn.20:31. "Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved." Acts 4:12; "jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me." Jn.14:6.

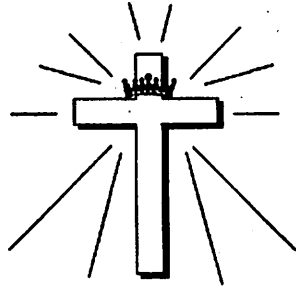
The Lord Jesus Christ, being the Eternal Son of God, has been given all authority both in heaven and earth. He is the Creator of all things. "All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made." Jn.1:3. He is the King of kings and Lord of lords and has always been equal with God the Father, and God the Holy Spirit. "For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding; That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God; Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all patience and longsuffering with joyfulness; Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: And he is before all things, and by him all things consist. And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence. For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell; And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven." Col.1:9-20.

The Lord Jesus Christ will eventually reign over all in the mighty power granted to him by the Father. The Lord Jesus Christ shall be all in all and then present the vast domain over unto the Father, when all death will be destroyed forever. "Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet. The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. For he hath put all things under his feet. But when he saith all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted, which did put all things under him. And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all." 1 Cor.15:24-28. The unity within the Godhead is absolutely perfect and once all opposition to God's character is destroyed, then a perfect new creation will be forth coming, without interruption of the evil forces. As saints of God, we will enter into an absolutely glorious and perfect environment. What a day of rejoicing that will be! The King is coming for his own and praise God the King will return with his own and the kingdoms of this world will become the kingdom of God.

QUESTIONS CHAPTER SEVEN

- 1. Give as many events as possible that will occur, before the kingdom is established.**
- 2. When will the goats be separated from the sheep as mentioned in Matthew chp 25:31-46?**
- 3. What must take place before Christ returns to set up his kingdom of righteousness?**
- 4. Why the difference of time , as mentioned in Daniel 12:10-12?**
- 5. Name some examples of Biblical separation. Give Scripture references.**
- 6. Explain Genesis 49:8-12.**
- 7. Explain 2 Samuel 7:16;**
- 8. Write briefly on the subject, "Kinsman Redeemer" (Book of Ruth)**
- 9. How was Queen Esther used of God to save the tribe of Judah?
Why was it necessary to save these people?**
- 10. Why was a virgin birth necessary, for our Redeemer to enter this world?**
- 11. Why is it necessary for Christians to maintain a separated life?**
- 12. Give prophecy of the coming of the kingdom of righteousness.**
- 13. When the Lord comes (second advent), what condition will he find in this world?**
- 14. Why must the Lord first come for his own before the kingdom can be set up?**
- 15. Name at least seven changes that will take place, when the kingdom is established.**
- 16. When will the kingdom be established? What events will precede the coming of the kingdom of righteousness?**
- 17. Will all the people of the earth like the kingdom of righteousness? Explain.**
- 18. Why will a rod of iron be necessary to maintain a kingdom of righteousness?**
- 19. Explain Revelation 11:15.**
- 20. Write a thesis on "The Coming of the Kingdom of Righteousness"**

CHAPTER EIGHT



Christ the Supreme Judge

CHAPTER EIGHT

CHRIST

THE SUPREME JUDGE

INTRODUCTION

At the close of the thousand-year reign of righteousness by the Lord Jesus Christ, all the unregenerate souls from every nation, race and color will be brought forth from Sheol for their final judgement for eternity. No one who is of the age of accountability will escape. They will have to face the one who had provided redemption, which they refused. We will consider the following aspects of this final judgement:

- I. THE SECOND RESURRECTION**
- II. THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGEMENT**
- III. THE FINAL DESTINATION OF THE UNGODLY**

I. THE SECOND RESURRECTION.

"Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power," Rev.20:6a. "And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God;" Rev.20:12a. "And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works." Rev.20:13. "Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation." Jn.5:28-29.

It is of the utmost importance that we understand who has the command to raise the dead. The Eternal Son of God has been given this authority. "Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?" Jn.11:25,26. When the Lord cried out at the grave, "Lazarus come forth!", Jn.11:43. Lazarus came forth with that mighty power of God. "And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth." Matt.28:18. As the Eternal Son of God will have power to raise all believers, so he will demonstrate that power in raising all the ungodly, from Cain on down through the corridor of time. There will be a division among all of mankind, some to everlasting life and others to everlasting contempt. "And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt." Dan.12:2.

The Lord God Almighty will come down to this earth in his wrath against the ungodly, and he will pour out his vengeance upon them. "And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, in flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power;" 2 Thess.1:7-9. This second resurrection will be the final appearance of the ungodly before the Lord Jesus Christ. The battle of Armageddon will be his first encounter as he descends from heaven to set up the kingdom of righteousness. There will be one thousand years of a glorious reign of righteousness in the whole wide world. This righteousness of God will be the order of the day, and ruled with a rod of iron. But the second resurrection will be the eternal judgement passed upon all the unregenerate of all ages. Sin has been condemned through the sacrificial death of the Lord Jesus Christ. "For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh." Rom.8:3. Therefore, all who will be raised in the second resurrection for their final judgement are without excuse. God has revealed his warning to mankind many times over, with partial judgement during the ages past. Sodom and Gomorrah were examples of this partial judgement, for all of those who perished will be raised from the dead to be judged. "For God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be revealed unto judgement; And he spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an example unto those that after should live ungodly;" 2 Pet.2:4-6.

There will be no escape from this living death, which will take place when the unbelievers of all ages are raised to face their final judgement. Regardless of their good works, if they are apart from Christ, they will face the everlasting lake of fire and brimstone. The Lord God who is from everlasting to everlasting, has a time for this final judgement upon the ungodly. The Lord Jesus Christ of the house of David will cause the ungodly to come forth during that second resurrection. "For there are set thrones of judgement, the thrones of the house of David." Ps.122:5. Christ will be that supreme judge, and regardless of where the ungodly are located, they all shall be raised during this second resurrection.

This second resurrection is to take place as the final living death to be experienced by all unbelievers of all ages. They will number into the trillions and be called to stand before the Eternal Son of God. There will be no believers among these, and all will have to stand before the Great White Throne Judgement. At present they are in "Sheol", the place of the dead. We do have an indication of this place of the dead, mentioned by the Son of God. There was a certain rich man who dwelt upon this earth, who was rich and had need of nothing. There also was a certain beggar name Lazarus, who continually was laid at the rich man's gate for all he desired was a little food. Eventually the beggar, Lazarus died. It is interesting to note. "And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: and the rich man died and was buried;" Lk. 16:22. The contrast between the two is outstanding. The beggar was carried by the angels, and the rich man was buried. The Lord did not give us the full details of this story, but sufficient to let us know that when the believers die, their angels are present to receive them. Until Christ's sacrificial death upon the cross, all the dead went to

a place called "Sheol". As we read this true story of the rich man and Lazarus, we also are told that there was a great gulf fixed between the believers and the unbelievers. The unbelievers are constantly tormented, as we have the truth of this rich man. Another interesting observation in beholding this place of the dead, is the fact that there was recognition of those across that great gulf. Certainly if they could recognize each other at a distance, we will be able to recognize each other as believers. The torment must have been terrible, that the rich man would be satisfied with but a bit of moisture from the tip of the finger of the beggar Lazarus. Read carefully Luke 16:19-31. Note also the concern that the rich man had for his brothers, but all was too late. The believers on the one side of the place of the dead were finally removed by the Lord, when he descended into Sheol and brought forth the believers of all ages, into the Paradise of God the Father. (Ps.68:18.) However, here we wish to mention that the unbelievers of all ages will remain in Sheol, or as we know it today as Hell, until the second resurrection. There is no intermediate place for the unregenerate dead, but hell.

When that final day comes that the dead outside of Christ are to be raised. Hell will be emptied, and both hell and death will be cast into the lake of fire. "And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death." Rev.20:14. All of the unbelieving human beings of all races, languages, and color will come forth from hell, and be brought before the Great White Throne, as we will be discussing shortly. It will be a terrible ordeal for all of these condemned souls to pass through. There will be no second chance given to them, once they die, as their opportunities in life will be over. Their torment in hell will continue on through the ages, and also during the thousand years of the kingdom of righteousness. This second resurrection will be the final resurrection of the wicked dead, and their sentence will be proclaimed from the White Throne Court, as falling short of the glory of God. Let us now examine what the Bible has to say about the Great White Throne judgement.

II. THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGEMENT.

"I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head like the pure wool: his throne was like the fiery flame, and his wheels as burning fire. A fiery stream issued and came forth from before him: thousand thousands ministered unto him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him: the judgement was set, the books were opened." Dan.7:9-10. This is very significant that Daniel the prophet was given this vision of the great white throne. This court room will be filled with the ungodly souls raised from the dead, and Christ's billions of holy angels will be present to administer the command of the Lord. This is going to be a mournful time for many who have put their trust in idols and false prophets. "Wherefore God hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father." Phil.2:9-11. The white throne judgement will be the only time that every knee will be able to bow and acknowledge Jesus as the Eternal Son of God. We as believers have bowed our knee and confessed Christ as Lord and Savior. Those that have followed these false teachers with their cults and idols, will all bow before the Eternal Son of God. It will be too late for them to make amends, and perhaps for most of them it would be impossible for them to do so.

ALL WILL BE FOUND GUILTY.

God's standard of righteousness has never changed. It is based upon his eternal character. The word of God declares, "For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;" Rom.3:23. We are also told by the word of God, "But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away. And there is none that calleth upon thy name, that stirreth up himself to take hold of thee: for thou hast hid thy face from us, and hast consumed us, because of our iniquities." Isa.64:6-7. However, we who have accepted Christ as our personal Savior now have been justified. "Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus; Whom God hath set forth to be the propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus." Rom.3:24-26. We who have put our trust in the Lord Jesus Christ will be partakers of the first resurrection, but those who will be raised to stand before the great white throne will be judged according to their own self righteousness. "For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord." Rom.6:23.

Since God paid the debt of the sins of the whole world, through the death and resurrection of his Eternal Son, the issue will not be "Sin" but, rather, "Son"! The unpardonable sin of all ages is the rejection of the Lord Jesus Christ. All of those who will be raised during the second resurrection will have committed the unpardonable sin of the rejection of the Lord Jesus Christ. With billions of God's mighty holy angels, the task before the white throne will be thorough and complete. "And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire." Rev.20:11-15.

God does not give us much detail about this final judgement of the ungodly since we will not be numbered among them, but here is what is prevalent:

- 1. God does not wish that one soul perish. (2 Pet.3:9.)**
- 2. Christ died for the sins of the whole world. (1 Jn.2:2.)**
- 3. The white throne judgement will be based upon their rejection of Christ the Eternal Son of God. It will not be based upon their sins. (Jn.3:36.)**
- 4. The book of works will be opened, revealing all of their good works, which will fall short of the perfect righteousness of God. (Rom.3:23.)**

5. No one shall escape the eternal lake of fire and brimstone, whose name is not written in the book of life. Rev.20:15.

III. THE FINAL DESTINATION OF THE UNGODLY.

WITHOUT EXCUSE

It will be a terrible things to fall into the wrath of God when there should be no reason, whatsoever, to do so. The Lord beckons to all, "Come now, and let us reason together, saith the Lord: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool." Isa.1:18. "For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him is not condemned; but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. And this is condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil." Jn.3:17-19. "He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life; and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him." Jn.3:36. "Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip. For if the word spoken by angels was steadfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense of reward; How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him; God also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Spirit according to his own will?" Heb.2:1-4.

The great white throne judgement is entirely different from the judgement seat of Christ. The white throne seals the destiny of the ungodly, but the judgement seat of Christ tests the faithfulness of the believers and issues rewards for responsibility throughout eternity. For the ungodly there will be no escape route, but they will be under the torment of fire and brimstone for eternity. The stench of both death and hell will be cast into this burning lake. (Rev.20:14.) Although some of the wickedness has been dealt with, in part, through these partial judgements, the final eternal judgement is waiting to be poured out upon all who have rejected the Eternal Son of God, the Lord Jesus Christ.

As the Lord spoke in parables, he gave sufficient evidence of the terribleness of the final judgement. Those that are teaching the wrong things to the children are warned. "But whosoever shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. Woe unto the world because of offenses! for it must needs be that offenses come; but woe to that man by whom the offenses cometh! Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire." Matt.18:6-9. Of course the cutting off of members of your body would not alter your ungodliness, but the Lord mentioned this extreme measure to indicate the terribleness of the judgement of the lake of fire. "And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out; it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire; Where the worm dieth not; and the fire is not quenched." Mk.9:47-48. This lake of fire does not end one's existence, but, rather, it brings

a constant torment day and night forever and ever. There will be no rest of the soul in such a place. The most terrible experiences that one may have in this life, are but nothing compared to the lake of fire and brimstone. There will be no sedatives or other drugs to relieve the torment, and moaning and groaning will continue throughout eternity. These warnings which the Lord has placed in the Bible are to convince souls, for whom Christ died, to believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and be saved from the wrath to come. Christ has offered to "Whosoever" a way of escape from the wrath to come. He also reminds all of the believers that he has been given a great commission from the Father. "I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I, if it be already kindled? But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straightened till it be accomplished! Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay: but rather division;" Lk.12:49-51. This division between the believers and the nonbelievers will continue until this final judgement will be fulfilled. We have to constantly remind ourselves that we are just passing through this life as ambassadors for Christ. This old world is becoming a Sodom and Gomorrah. It will continue to get worse as we draw near to the coming of the Lord. Praise God the saints shall be raptured and caught up, out from the wrath to come. (1 Thess.1:10.) We as the future bride of Christ, will spend seven wonderful years in heaven, with the Lord, as God pours out his wrath upon the wicked.

THE ETERNAL FIRE

Fire is usually used in God's word to express God's wrath and method of judgement. "For a fire is kindled in mine anger, and shall burn unto the lowest hell, and shall consume the earth with her increase, and set on fire the foundations of the mountains." Deut.32:22. A consuming fire will come down from heaven to destroy the armies surrounding Jerusalem after the thousand year reign of Christ. "And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them." Rev.20:9. However, the greatest of fires will be started by God when he destroys both heaven and earth with fervent heat. "But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up. Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness." 2 Pet.3:10-11. Make no mistake about the power of Almighty God, who is able to purge with fire and also to consume with fire. "See that ye refuse not him that speaketh. For if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven: Whose voice then shook the earth: but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven. And the word, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain. Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear: For our God is a consuming fire." Heb.12:25-29.

There are those who would try to discredit the existence of hell fire by saying that the only hell that we will get is during our lifetime upon planet earth. If this were the case, then there would be ample injustice, because many of the wicked live luxuriously in this life at the expense of others. No, we are well informed through the Scripture about this burning hell and

the lake of fire and brimstone. The Lord himself clearly stated the existence of hell: "Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill: and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgement; But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgement: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, (contemptible or worthless) shall be in danger of the council; but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire." Matt.5:21-22. This hell fire, as judgement from God does not lessen as time goes on, but it will remain eternally and be intensive beyond any fire that we could experience in our lifetime. God's fire and brimstone shall never be quenched, but it will remain for ever and ever! (Mk.9:43.)

God places a great value upon a human soul. He was willing to send his Eternal Son to die so that our souls could be redeemed and delivered from the hell fire that will be coming for those who reject him. "For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?" Matt.16:26. If the Eternal Son of God places a great value upon a human soul, certainly we should consider the importance of taking heed to God's word and establish the eternal values in this life.

THE ANGELS OF GOD WILL GATHER THE HARVEST FOR THIS GREAT FIRE

There is a day coming when the angels will be sent forth to reap the harvest from among those who reject the Lord and remain in their iniquity. "The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; And shall cast them into a furnace of fire; there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear." Matt.13:41-43. There will be a reckoning day, and we must make our decision while there is still time. This lake of fire is real. God's eternal word reveals this coming judgement. "Put ye in the sickle, for the harvest is ripe; come, get you down; for the press is full, the fats overflow; for their wickedness is great. Multitudes, multitudes in the valley of decision: for the day of the Lord is near in the valley of decision." Joel 3:13-14. "And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle. And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle and reap; for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe. And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped. And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle. And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe. And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great winepress of the wrath of God. And the winepress was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the winepress, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs." Rev.14:14-20. This is but a small sample of the reaping and wrath of God against all ungodliness. There is a day coming when the complete harvest of rebellion and rejection shall be reaped. God is biding his time, until the cup of iniquity is full and overflowing. All of this will culminate at the Great White Throne, when the King of kings and Lord of lords sits upon it and judges all ungodliness of all ages. The battle

is still in array, and it is necessary that we put on the whole armor of God to withstand the fiery darts of the evil one. (Eph.6:11.)

Hell was created for the devil and his angels (Matt.25:41.), but, because of sin and the total depravity of man, God has had to prepare a place for those who reject his Son, the Lord Jesus Christ. Some of these angels were so wicked that God had to place them in everlasting chains under darkness until their final punishment of the lake of fire.(Jude 6) Others are sealed under the Euphrates River until God releases them for their final onslaught upon mankind and, then, their judgement. "And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God, saying to the sixth angel which had the trumpet, Loose the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates." Rev.9:13-14. Then another whole army of demons are sealed in the bottomless pit, and they will be released in God's time, as the battle for the souls of men will continue. (Rev.9:2-11.) The lake of continual fire which burns forever and ever will be the final place of torment for all ungodliness. As we search the Scripture, we are reminded of this conflict that will continue, until God pours out his concluding wrath upon all wickedness, removing it from his presence forever. When this is accomplished, all things will be made new and sin will be no more. Until that great and glorious day arrives, according to the will of God, there is a battle raging in the realm of the evil spirits, and we need to depend upon God the Holy Spirit to have the victory. May we as Christians have the discernment necessary to defeat the evil forces. "Beloved, believe not every spirit but try the spirits whether they be of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God." 1 Jn.4:1-2.

THE CONFLICT OF THE AGES

This all reminds us that there is a conflict of the ages in progress. "For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places." Eph.6:12. Satan and the demons know that their judgement is coming, and they are trying their best to draw millions of human souls with them into this lake of fire and brimstone. Since the devil cannot drag the believers into this final judgement, he does try his very best to defeat the purpose of God in their lives. But praise God, we have God the Holy Spirit living within us and the Word of God to be our guide through life. "Casting all your care upon him; for he careth for you. Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour; Whom resist steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world. But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you. To him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen." 1 Pet.5:7-11.

Our work upon this earth is not to acquire this material wealth, but rather to lay up treasures in heaven, where moth and rust cannot corrupt. The great commission has been given by the Lord himself. "Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit; Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the age. Amen." Matt.28:19-20.

Certainly, having understood the terrible torment to come upon our fellow man, it behooves us to proclaim the good news and tell of the escape route through the Lord Jesus Christ. It is our way of showing to God our appreciation in a small way, as to what great love has been shed abroad in our hearts. "Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the children of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not. Beloved, now are we the children of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be; but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is. And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure." 1 Jn.3:1-3.

The conflict will continue throughout our lives, and we overcome by the help of God. "Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them; because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world." 1 Jn.4:4. Having been given a new birth by the Holy Spirit and sealed by him, we are made aware of this spiritual conflict. "But ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things" 1 Jn.2:20. Our knowledge comes from the word of God, and God the Holy Spirit guides us and teaches us these marvelous truths.

Christ is the supreme judge, appointed by God the Father, and we are the body of Christ. Regardless of the growth that we have in the Lord, we overcome the evil forces by the mighty power of God. "I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one." 1 Jn.2:13-14. In that day when the great tribulation comes upon this earth, we can rest assured in Christ Jesus, the mighty judge that victory belongs to him. "These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb, shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful." Rev.17:14. Christ the supreme judge has been appointed to this by God the Father. "For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgement unto the Son." Jn.5:22. Every judgement whether among the saints or with the ungodly, shall be carried out by the Eternal Son of God, the Lord Jesus Christ.

THE FINAL DESTINATION OF THE WICKED

As we have previously quoted, "And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire." Rev.20:15. There they will remain forever and with no escape whatsoever. Death and hell will exist with them, side by side, and the stench of evil will surround them forever. I do not know whether there will be gradations of punishments, according to the individuals, but we know that the rejection of Christ is the unpardonable sin that will convict them and cause them to be cast into the lake of fire. "But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone; which is the second death." Rev.21:8. "The Lord trieth the righteous; but the wicked and him that loveth violence his soul hateth. Upon the wicked he shall rain snares, fire and brimstone, and an horrible tempest: this shall be the portion of their cup. For the righteous Lord loveth righteousness; his countenance doth behold the upright." Ps.11:5-7. There will be many stranded in their wickedness in that day of God's final judgement. John the Baptist called out against the religious leaders of his day. "But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to

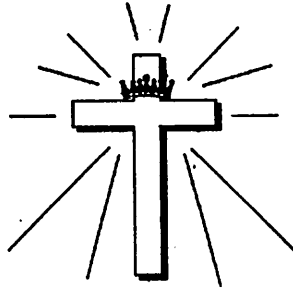
his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance." Matt.3:7-8. "For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness." Rom.1:18. Down through the history of mankind, there will be great throngs of souls raised from the dead in this second resurrection, to face the eternal wrath of God. "But after thy hardness and impotent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgement of God; who will render to every man according to his deeds. To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honor and immortality, eternal life; But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath, tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first and also of the Gentile;" Rom.2:5-9. The wrath of God will come and may we who know the Lord as our personal Savior, warn those around about us of the terribleness to fall into the hands of an angry God. "Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience." Eph.5:6. There is a time coming when God's declaration will be fulfilled. "For the great day of his wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?" Rev.6:17.

As I bring to a close this study of the final destination of the ungodly, may I remind each reader of this book, that what God has written will be literally fulfilled, God has clearly stated in the Bible sufficient warning. God has done everything possible to make sure an escape route from his wrath. He is holding out his arms in mercy based upon the finished work on Calvary. His marvelous grace has been manifested through his Eternal Son who was willing to take our place on the cross to redeem us from the penalty of sin. We all have inherited a sin nature from Adam, as well as falling short of the glory of God. We are all totally depraved apart from the provision by God. Don't be deceived by thinking that you can reach the heavenly goal by your own works. "For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast." Eph.2:8-9. "Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot:" 1 Pet.1:18-19. Christ came to save sinners, and was not sent to condemn the world, but that the world through him might be saved. (John 3:17.) God wants to give each of us his eternal peace as adopted children. "Therefore, being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom also we have access by faith into the grace in which we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God." Rom.5:1-2.

QUESTIONS CHAPTER EIGHT

- 1. Explain the second resurrection. Who all will be included in the second resurrection?**
- 2. Who all are included in the first resurrection?**
- 3. Who of the Godhead has the authority to raise the dead?**
- 4. Explain Daniel 12:2; 2 Thess.1:7-9.**
- 5. Explain Romans 8:3.**
- 6. Write briefly on 2 Peter 2:4-6.**
- 7. Explain Psalm 122:5.**
- 8. Who all will appear at the Great White Throne Judgement?**
- 9. To what does Daniel 7:9-10 refer?**
- 10. When will every knee bow to the Lord Jesus Christ?**
- 11. Will there be believers to be judged at the Great White Throne? Explain.**
- 12. What will be the issue at the Great White Throne?**
- 13. Based on the character of the Godhead, why is the Great White Throne judgement just? Give 5 reasons.**
- 14. Will there be a second chance for the ungodly after the Great White Throne Judgement? Explain.**
- 15. Explain the difference between the Judgement seat of Christ and the Great White Throne.**
- 16. What did the Lord have to say about this coming final judgement?**
- 17. Write briefly on "The Conflict Of The Ages".**
- 18. Why are Believers left on this earth?**

CHAPTER NINE



Christ of the New Heavens and New Earth

CHAPTER NINE

CHRIST OF THE NEW HEAVENS AND THE NEW EARTH

INTRODUCTION

Behold all things shall be made new! This new creation of God will be so marvelous that what we behold now cannot be compared to the beauty which God is preparing for the saints and for the angels. We can only imagine what it will be like in part, even though God has given us an insight as to what we can expect. The Bible has much to say as to the thousand year reign of righteousness, but very little is described to us as to what God will create when the old heavens and earth are destroyed. May we consider the following aspects of the new heavens and the new earth as found in the Bible.

- I. THE NEW HEAVENS**
- II. THE NEW EARTH**
- III. THE NEW JERUSALEM**
- IV. THE NEW PARADISE**

-
- I. THE NEW HEAVENS**

THE PRESENT HEAVENS

The present heavens declare the glory of God in their beauty and in their magnitude. (Ps.19:1.) The orbiting of the sun, the moon and the stars are in perfect and exact timing. The Bible is filled with references to the heavens. Let us consider some of these scriptures in identifying, the dwelling place of our Eternal God. We are reminded from the Word of God that all of the heavens and the earth belong to God. (Gen.14:22.) "Behold, the heaven and the heaven of heavens is the Lord's thy God, the earth also, with all that therein is." Deut.10:14. In spite of the vastness of the heavens, they would be far too small to contain our living God. King Solomon recognized the greatness of Almighty God. "But will God indeed dwell on the earth? Behold, the heaven and heaven of heavens cannot contain thee: how much less this house that I have builded?" 1 Ki.8:27. Consider the vastness of the heavens with the stars that cannot be counted for number. Yet, if God so desired, he could calculate it all in the smallest of measure. "Who hath measured the waters in the hollow of his hand, and meted out heaven with a span, and comprehended the dust of the earth in a measure, and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance? Who hath directed the Spirit of the Lord, or being his counsellor hath taught him? With whom took he counsel, and who instructed him, and taught him in the path of judgement, and taught him knowledge, and showed to him the way of understanding?"

Behold, the nations are as a drop in a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance: Behold, he taketh up the isles as a very little thing." Isa.40:12-15.

THE TEMPLE OF GOD

The pattern from which Solomon's temple was designed had the measurements from the heavenly temple. Ezekiel had an outstanding revelation of the temple. (Ezek.43:1-18.) The study of the temple of God is of great importance. "The Lord is in his holy temple, the Lord's throne is in heaven: his eyes behold, his eyelids try, the children of men. The Lord trieth the righteous; but the wicked and him that loveth violence his soul hateth. Upon the wicked he shall rain snares, fire and brimstone, and an horrible tempest; this shall be the portion of their cup. For the righteous Lord loveth righteousness; his countenance doth behold the upright." Ps.11:4-7. We need to be reminded of the watchful eye of the Lord upon this earth from his home in heaven. "The Lord looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, and seek God. They are all gone aside, they are all together become filthy: there is none that doeth good, no, not one." Ps.14:2-3. This is not an encouraging picture which the Lord sees of his creatures here on earth, but we are reminded, "For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;" Rom.3:23. It is also an encouragement to believers to realize, "He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities. For as the heaven is high above the earth, so great is his mercy toward them that fear him. As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us." Ps.103:10-12. Christ, being both King and high priest before God the Father, is our Advocate in the very holy of holies, within the temple. "My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous." 1 Jn.2:1. "But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him." Rom.5:8-9.

THE OLD HEAVENS TO BE BURNED WITH FERVENT HEAT

This great and vast creation of God has been contaminated with sin, both in heaven and on earth. God looks upon all of this creation as a challenge to make a new thing, so beautiful that these former things shall not even be remembered. There is nothing too hard for the Lord of hosts to do! The Lord has foretold the coming of these new things. "I am the Lord; that is my name; and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images. Behold the former things are come to pass, and new things do I declare: before they spring forth I tell you of them. Sing unto the Lord a new song, and his praise from the end of the earth, ye that go down to the sea, and all that is therein; the isles, and the inhabitants thereof." Isa.42:8-10 The Lord declares these new things unto the people, before they come to pass, so that these false prophets and idol worshippers do not claim that their magic has brought it to pass. (Isa.48:3-7.) So the Lord has revealed in prophecy that the old heavens and the old earth will be burned with fervent heat. "Looking for and hastening unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?" 2 Pet.3:12.

THE NEW HEAVENS

It is clearly stated in the Old Testament that God will create new heavens. The first heavens will pass away with fervent heat, when the fullness of time will come, according to God's Master Plan. "For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered nor come to mind. But be ye glad and rejoice for ever in that which I create; for, behold I create Jerusalem a rejoicing, and her people a joy. And I will rejoice in Jerusalem and joy in my people; and the voice of weeping shall be no more heard in her, nor the voice of crying." Isa.65:17-19. This new creation of God has already started in the lives of the Christians. "Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature; old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; To wit, that God was in Christ reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation." 2 Cor.5:17-19. We are to reckon ourselves as new creatures and to behave like new persons. "That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness." Eph.4:22-24; Our old way of life should be done away with, when we are new creatures in Christ Jesus. "Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds; And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him;" Col.3:9-10. In Christ we have a new and living way, which is in preparation for the new heavens and the new earth which the Lord has prepared in his Master Plan. "Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, By a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh; and having an high priest over the house of God; Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water, let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; (for he is faithful that promised;)" Heb.10:19-23.

This should be our pattern of life as new creatures in Christ Jesus, for all things are going to be created new and more beautiful than anything of the past. It will be so wonderful that the former beauties will not be remembered. Of course, there will be those sweet memories of brothers and sisters in the Lord within a Christian fellowship, which is a foretaste of the eternal fellowship with the Lord and with one another. Our contact with heaven is through the continual home-going of the saints, who bring fresh news from the brethren here on earth. They have many things to relate, one to another, as the newcomers arrive. "Precious in the sight of the Lord is the death of his saints." Ps.116:15. The Lord is preparing everything new, and he even has a new name for each of us. "He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it." Rev.2:17. That does not mean that with our new name we will not know each other. Our identification as believers in this life will carry through eternity. "For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face; now I know in part; but then shall I know even as I am known." 1 Cor.13:12. There will be new songs to be sung and new glorious experiences to behold. "And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open

the seals thereof; for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; And hast made us unto our God kings and priests; and we shall reign on earth." Rev.5:9-10.

We are looking forward to that time when all things are created new and the old things, which were contaminated with sin, will be gone forever. "Looking for and hastening unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat? Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness. Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blameless." 2 Pet.3:12-14. The complete new heavens and the new earth will be forever free from sin! It is in fulfillment of God's promise according to Daniel 9:24. Sin will never cast a blight upon God's new creation.

"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea." Rev.21:1. This is a brief statement involving so great a creation, but with few words of declaration, but mighty acts of implication! This brief statement contains a few important factors, indicated within itself as well as elsewhere in the Bible

1. **This new heaven and earth will replace the former heavens and earth.**
2. **The old heavens and earth will be burned with fervent heat.**
3. **There will be no seas to separate and divide the lands.**
4. **The size is not revealed of either the heavens or the earth. They may be far larger than the former.**
5. **There will be two added features accompanying the new heavens and the new earth, namely, "New Jerusalem", and "Paradise".**
6. **God in person shall dwell with mankind as he has dwelt with the angels.**
7. **God's creatures as joint heirs with Christ shall inherit great wealth.**
8. **The tree of life will be accessible to all.**
9. **God will dwell among men**
10. **Access to heaven and earth will be available.**
11. **A special city with foundations will be between the new heaven and the new earth.**

II. THE NEW EARTH

NEW THINGS BY THE LORD

As we have already considered some of the features of the coming new heavens and the new earth with that beautiful New Jerusalem, may we now focus on this new earth which the Lord will create. There is nothing too hard for the Lord. As the Lord is regathering his people Israel back into their land, he declares that he will do a new thing for them. "I, even I, am the Lord; and beside me there is no savior. I have declared, and have saved, and I have showed, when there was no strange god among you; therefore ye are my witnesses, saith the Lord, that I am God. Yea, before the day was I am he; and there is none that can deliver out of my hand: I will work, and who shall let it? Thus saith the Lord, your redeemer, the Holy One of Israel; For your sake I have sent to Babylon, and have brought down all their nobles, and the Chaldeans, whose cry is in the ships. I am the Lord, your Holy One, the creator of Israel, your king. Thus saith the Lord, which maketh a way in the sea, and a path in the mighty waters; Which bringeth forth the chariot and horse, the army and the power; they shall lie down together, they shall not rise: they are extinct, they are quenched as tow. Remember ye not the former things, neither consider the things of old. Behold, I will do a new thing; now it shall spring forth; shall ye not know it? I will even make a way in the wilderness, and rivers in the desert." Isa.43:11-19. As the Lord continues to do a mighty thing with Israel, so we can rest assured that he will create a glorious new earth .

It is of great interest that during the kingdom age the Lord will restore the old earth for the thousand year reign. This gives us a clue as to what we can expect when the new earth is created. But the new earth will have such beauty and perfection, that the old earth will "not be remembered, nor come to mind." Isa.65:17b. The Lord will maintain this new earth and it shall remain forever. "For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before me, saith the Lord, so shall your seed and your name remain." Isa.66:22. This is of great interest as the Lord compares the eternal new things with eternal Israel.

NEW PEOPLE UPON THE EARTH

"And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be anymore pain: for the former things are past away. And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful." Rev.21:3-5.

These statements from God are beyond comprehension! For us to even imagine such conditions would be absolutely impossible. May we consider what John was told, regarding the new order of life upon the new earth which the Lord will create. John was no doubt so stunned by what he heard and saw that he forgot to write. The Lord had to remind him to start writing. Let us, for the sake of clarity, list these important statements from God.

1. **God will dwell with mankind in a visible form.**
2. **God will claim ownership of redeemed mankind.**
3. **There will be no idol worship, because the living God will dwell with his creatures.**
4. **There will be no more crying, as God will personally wipe away all tears. This implies that there will be a continual joy experienced by the dwellers of earth.**
5. **Life will not be measured in time, because death will be eliminated. There will be only eternal life with God.**
6. **Sickness, pain, and disease will all be things of the past. All people will have perfect health with eternal life.**
7. **These statements were given with authority from the throne of God.**
8. **There will be a new creation which will be different from anything of the past.**

"And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely." Rev.21:6. Christ, the Eternal Son of God, set this truth before the woman at the well. "Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water." Jn.4:10. "Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again: But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life." Jn.4:13-14. Water is more important to our bodies than food, as our bodies consist of mainly liquid. Therefore, this will be a condition in the new earth as water will never be an issue. The new earth shall have ample supplies of pure, clear and uncontaminated water from the Creator, the Alpha and Omega.

"He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son." Rev.21:7 To thoroughly understand what is meant by "Overcometh", we need to search the scripture for the answer. During the latter part of the tribulation, when the devil and his demons are cast down to the earth; there will be a great struggle among the saints. "And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto death." Rev.12:11. Christ encouraged his disciples. "These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world." Jn.16:33. "For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God." 1 Jn.5:4-5. Here is what God promises in the new earth.

1. **Equal inheritance of all things for the saints.**

2. **The saints will have a personal friendship and relationship with God.**
3. **The saints are already adopted into the royal family of God as sons.**

THE FULLNESS OF THE NEW EARTH.

Having only brief statements about this new earth which God is going to create, it is very difficult to give an explicit summary of what we can expect. However, we know from this present earth with all of its beauty, in spite of the corruption, that the new earth will be beyond our wildest imagination. "But is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. But God hath revealed them unto us by the Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea the deep things of God. For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? Even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God." 1 Cor.2:9-12. God the Holy Spirit as we read the Bible, is able to show us many of these wonderful new things to come. When the kingdom of righteousness is established, the perfect ideals of God will be taught to all. Since God is the same yesterday, today, and forever, we can expect his perfect standards to be established in both the new heavens and the new earth. We are given the opportunity, as saints of God, to walk in newness of life in this present life. "Know ye not that, as many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? Therefore, we are buried with him by baptism into death, that as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life." Rom.6:3-4.

As we conclude this brief study on the new earth which God will create, may we be mindful of that great commission from the Lord, encouraging precious souls to be prepared for the marvelous new creation that God has in store for those who believe. We as new creatures in Christ Jesus have been guaranteed, by God the Holy Spirit, to be partakers of these wonderful things to come. This newness of life in Christ Jesus has also freed us from the law of sin and death and has provided us with God the Holy Spirit. "But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead in which we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit and not in the oldness of the letter." Rom.7:6. God has begun to create all things new by providing us with a new birth by the Holy Spirit. We can rest assured that, upon this new earth, sin will never appear as it did in this old world. God hasn't given us many details about the size, conditions, and details, but we can be certain of what the Bible says, the old things will not even be remembered. Our new life has already begun, for we have been made new creatures in Christ Jesus. When that trumpet sounds, we shall shake off this old nature, once and forever, and live eternally in our sinless glorified body with the Bridegroom. To God be the glory, great things He hath done.

III. THE NEW JERUSALEM

"And there came unto me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will show thee the bride, the

Lamb's wife. And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and showed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God. Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal;"Rev.21:9-11.

The dwelling place of the bride of Christ and the bride herself will be seen as an intricate part of each other. We will see this New Jerusalem being measured, signifying that it is not to be taken as a fantasy, but rather as a real tangible city with foundations. The bride of Christ will be made up of individual members, as has been verified in the Bible. "For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another." Rom.12:4-5. "For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body; so also is Christ." 1 Cor.12:12. We shall shine forth to the glory of God in the brightness of the bridegroom. This does not mean that we will be transparent, but, rather, we will glow with the glory of the Eternal Son of God. This holy city, which will descend from heaven, will have twelve gates in honor of the twelve tribes of Israel and twelve foundations in honor of the twelve apostles. This will identify the holy city as representing both Israel and the church.

The glory of God will shine forth from all the saints of God, whether as the bride, or as the friends of the bridegroom. We have some heavenly scenes where people are described as a sea of glass for brightness. "And I saw as it were, a sea of glass mingled with fire, and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, standing on the sea of glass, having the harps of God." Rev.15:2. These will be the tribulation saints, who no doubt will be slain during the great tribulation. There are already great multitudes in heaven who were slain for the cause of Christ and there will be more, who will be slain for the cause of Christ, during the great tribulation. "After this I beheld and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and peoples, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands, and cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God who sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb." Rev.7:9-10. These will be those who will come out of the great tribulation as indicated in Rev.7:14. We have another mention of a sea of glass in heaven. "And before the throne there was a sea of glass like crystal; and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four living creatures full of eyes in front and behind." Rev.4:6. The brightness of Almighty God shines forth, reflected in his creatures. It is of great interest to read concerning this New Jerusalem, as Christ speaks to the church of Philadelphia. Although the saints of this church have passed on, yet the Lord promises them to be partakers of the glory of the New Jerusalem. The characteristics of this church were also observed in the 19th century during the great mission outreach, with the Word of God, around the world. "Because thou has kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth. Behold, I come quickly; hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown. Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out; and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, the New Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God; and I will write upon him my new name." Rev.3:10-12. Now this may seem to confine overcomers as being tied down to a pillar in the temple, but, on the contrary,

those that overcome will be in the center of activity within the temple of God. They will have a special insignia of authority from God. They will have access into this Holy City, the New Jerusalem, which shall come down from God. They will be identified as special with the very name of New Jerusalem written upon them.

THE GLORY OF GOD WILL ABOUND.

The New Jerusalem and the Bride of the Lamb will have the glory of God in their countenance and will shine forth forever and ever. Also remember that the bride-to be, is already a very special body of people. They already have God the Holy Spirit dwelling within them. So, the actual Holy City, the New Jerusalem, and the future Bride of Christ are very closely related. This New Jerusalem will be of great capacity, being some 12 to 13 hundred miles square, as well as tall. The City will be made of precious stones and crystal clear gold. "And I saw no temple in it; for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it. " Rev.21:22. This certainly was not some mist that John saw, for he was able to observe that there wasn't a temple in the complete city. God the Father and God the Son will dwell within this Holy City, and the Holy Spirit who dwells within us will also be represented in that marvelous city, which will be extended in the air over the new world which is to be created. We can trust God's word that all of this will come about, when time will be no more and all of the saints are safely in the presence of the true and only living God.

THERE WILL BE NO NIGHT IN NEW JERUSALEM

"And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it; for the glory of God did light it, and the Lamb is the lamp of it. And the nations of them that are saved shall walk in the light of it, and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honor into it. And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day; for there shall be no night there. And they shall bring the glory and honor of the nations into it. And there shall in no way enter into it anything that defileth, neither he that worketh abomination, or maketh a lie, but they who are written in the Lamb's book of life." Rev.21:23-27 There are several things to observe in these few verses. Let us consider them.

- 1. The light and glory of God abounds.**
- 2. The sun and the moon will not be missing, but they will not be needed for obtaining light.**
- 3. There will be a continuation of nations from among all the saved.**
- 4. There will be administrators, as well as kings, on the thrones of all of these nations.**
- 5. There will be glory and honor brought to the Holy City by these rulers. This implies that there will be an exchange of gifts.**

6. **There will be no closing time in the Holy City, as the gates will constantly remain open.**
7. **There will be no night there. There will be continual daylight.**
8. **Wickedness and sin being judged and sealed forever will not enter into the Holy City, the New Jerusalem.**
9. **Those who will dwell upon the new earth and in the Holy City will be the saints of God whose names are written in the book of life - no one else will be found in the Holy City.**

This Holy City, come down from God, will be the capital of the world, as the Bible declares. This will take place after the Millennial kingdom. The New Jerusalem will be established forever and ever, in God's new creation. It is interesting to note that Abraham knew about this new Holy Jerusalem. "By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a foreign country, dwelling in tents with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise; For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.: Heb. 11:9-10. This clearly indicates that the Old Testament saints were aware that God would create a city with many foundations in which they would eventually dwell. This also confirms that in order for these Old Testament saints to dwell in this great and holy city, they would have to be resurrected. The builder and maker of this city will be the Eternal Son of God, the Lord Jesus Christ.

THE NEW PARADISE

When the Lord burns this present heaven and earth, the Paradise, which the saints are now enjoying, will be burned as well. The saints of all ages will leave that heavenly Paradise and come and rule and reign with Christ for the thousand years. There will be the final battle with Satan, the white throne judgement, the casting of all unbelievers into the lake of fire, and then that great creation of heaven and earth.

We now have a description of what this new Paradise will look like and who will dwell within it. "And he showed me a pure river of water of life clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bore twelve kinds of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month; and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. And there shall be no more curse, but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and his servants shall serve him; And they shall see his face; and his name shall be in their foreheads. And there shall be no night there; and they need no lamp, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light, and they shall reign forever and ever." Rev. 22:1-5. Here again, there are some very important conditions that shall exist in this marvelous Paradise. Let us examine them.

1. **There will be no pollution in this river flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb.**

2. **Both God and the Lamb are present, and that means that the bride of Christ will be there as well.**
3. **There will be seasons for fruit bearing.**
4. **The trees will be ever-bearing, twelve consecutive times. This will repeat throughout eternity.**
5. **These fruit trees will have medicinal properties in the leaves, keeping the saints healthy. There will be no diseases.**
6. **The curse of sin and wickedness will be gone forever.**
7. **There will be a wonderful, godly fellowship and service to Almighty God, around the throne of God.**
8. **The saints shall see the face of God, and his identification will be upon their foreheads.**
9. **The brightness and the glory of God shall shine forth, greater than any other light.**
10. **There will be a continual day with no night.**
11. **This Paradise shall continue forever, with the whole world being ruled by God.**

This revelation sounds like it opposes Daniel. The Book of Revelation has become the key to the Book of Daniel, clarifying what was given to Daniel in part. The Book of Daniel and the Book of the Revelation of Jesus Christ, must be studied together, for each are complimentary to each other.

CONCLUSION

We have now come to the closing remarks about all things being made new. Christ, the Eternal Son of God, has made possible the new birth in our lives, preparing us for the new creation of heaven and earth. As we see the signs of the end of this age, we also read, "Behold, I come quickly. Blessed is he that keepeth the words of the prophecy of this book." Rev.22:7. Though the outlook for the unregenerate is terrible and eternal, yet the saints have much to look forward to, meeting God face to face. We will be free from the temptation of sin forever and ever. Let us accept and keep the words of the Book of Revelation as we worship God. The Eternal Son of God is waiting for zero hour, as chosen by the Father, to lead that great air lift into heaven itself. "And, behold, I come quickly, and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. For outside (the lake of fire) are dogs, and

sorcerers, and fornicators, and murders, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie. I, Jesus, have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and offspring of David, and the bright an morning star. And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely. For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book; And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part from the tree of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book." Rev.22:12-19.

This study on the Eternal Son of God is of great importance. We have traveled through the declarations of the Bible from Genesis to Revelation, and the closing remarks by the Eternal Son of God denote great authority, under the Master Plan of the Triune God. The Lord himself testifies of these great events to conclude the old things and to bring in the new and eternal things by "The Ancient Of Days". "He who testifieth these things saith, Surely, I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen."Rev.22:20-21.

QUESTIONS CHAPTER NINE

1. What do the present heavens declare to all of the people of the earth?
2. Why does God want to destroy the present heavens?
3. Where did Solomon get the measurements for the building of the temple of God?
4. Explain Psalm 11:4-7; and Psalm 14:2-3.
5. Why is it necessary that Christ is the Advocate for Christians in heaven?
6. What do you understand from the Bible, is God's first new thing? (2 Cor.5:17-19.)
7. Why is the death of the saints precious in God's sight? (Psalm 116:15.)
8. Explain 1 Corinthians 13:12; and Revelation 5:9-10.
9. Write briefly on 2 Peter 3:12-14.
10. Name some of the characteristics of the New Heaven.
11. What will the new earth be like? Give some of its features.
12. What will be different in the new earth?
13. What do you understand as the meaning of "Overcometh" in the Scripture?
14. Explain 1 Corinthians 2:9-12.
15. Write briefly on the subject, "The New Jerusalem".
16. What do you think is the purpose of the New Jerusalem?
17. Name some features concerning the New Jerusalem.
18. Write briefly on the subject, "The New Paradise".
19. Why do you accept Christ as the Eternal Son of God? Give Scripture.
20. Write a thesis on "The Last Message in the Bible". Revelation 22:6-21.

IN MEMORY OF MY BELOVED WIFE

DOROTHY LEONA LOSIER

BORN

DECEMBER FIVE 1911

GONE TO BE WITH THE LORD

MAY 16 1 P. M. 1992

I met Dorothy at Wheaton College and during a course of time, the Lord led us together on several occasions, then suddenly we saw very little of each other, until one day we met in the hall as classes were changing, and a sparkle from each other took place. During our senior sneak, we announced our engagement, and we knew it was God's choice that we should belong to each other for life. We had both dedicated our lives to the Lord for service as missionaries. Dorothy had one clause, when she surrendered almost all to the Lord. She said, "Lord I will go anywhere, but Africa". That changed in a matter of time, as we continued our courtship. As I finished my four years at Wheaton College, Dorothy took a mission course at Moody Bible Institute. I was going to go to a Bible College for further Biblical training, until Dr. Lewis Sperry Chafer taught the Ethics and Theism classes. It was exactly what I was hungry to hear, as he rightly divided the Word, according to dispensational truth. Dallas Theological Seminary became my choice, and my hunger for the Word of God was satisfied, with men like Dr. Ironside, Dr. Chafer, Jack Michael, Dr. Mackensie, Dr. Harrison, Dr. Feinberg and others. All of this prepared me for the mission field. Dr. Chafer came to Berne, Indiana to perform the marriage ceremony, uniting us in marriage for life, May 21, 1937. We sailed to East Africa in the fall of 1938, under the Africa Inland Mission, without man's support. The Lord gave us sweet Katherine Ann, for almost two years and she was carried into the arms of Jesus.

Dorothy was willing to endure great hardships, as my precious wife, raising a wonderful family of 2 daughters, Becky and Margie, and 5 sons, Jack, Paul, John, Roger, and Tom. Our Katherine Ann and Carol Marie were destined for a short stay with us, as God claimed them. Now their mother has gained her place in Paradise with them, May 16, 1992.

Dorothy and I worked among the Kipsigis, then some 14 years among the Masai. Dorothy was a loving mother raising her family under her own supervision. She also had great success in starting Sunday Schools, and teaching the Word to many groups of women. Her Sunday school programs were so arranged, to also reach the heathen mothers of these attending children.

In 1952, the Lord led us to start a new type of mission work, called, Christian Literature and Bible Center Inc., This gave me a great outreach with the printed page, and Dorothy with her musical talent, was used of the Lord to sing praise to the Lord. She had seven wonderful

years of radio broadcast in the Kiswahili language, broadcasting from Nairobi, Kenya.. We soon had Gospel tracts in 35 languages, and eventually in 50 languages as we spread out as far as South Africa and West Africa. Dorothy was a great help in proof reading, singing and teaching the Word to the women. We have spent ten years together in Toccoa Georgia, meeting precious saints of the Lord. Dorothy taught the Word, and sang to the Lord with her beautiful voice. Our home belongs to the Lord and Dorothy took great care, as we have had many saints come and fellowship with us. One great work which she accomplished and will live on forever, was the proof reading of my many Biblical textbooks. I have suffered a great loss, which was God's gain, as she flew away to be in the presence of the Lord Jesus Christ. My memories of my beloved Dorothy will always remain! I dedicate this textbook as a memorial to my faithful wife, who is now in Paradise, awaiting the sound of the trumpet of that great resurrection.

The Lord led us to Toccoa, Georgia in His providence, where we have many brothers and sisters in the Lord. The Lord is also providing for this memorial through brothers and sisters throughout the world. I count it a great privilege to establish such an eternal legacy to my beloved Dorothy who is safe in the presence of Jesus, in the glorious Paradise of the Father and in fellowship with the saints of all ages. As much as we miss Dorothy, none of us could wish her back into this world, having been set free from all aches and pains and death. We rejoice in the Lord for Dorothy's safe arrival in the presence of the Lord, and re-dedicate our lives to the Lord for the furthering of the Gospel.

Andrew J. Losier

"I can do all things through Christ, who strengtheneth me." Phil.4:13.

In the beginning

Was the Word, and the Word was with GOD
and the Word was GOD

JOHN 1:1

Eternity Past

THE ABSOLUTE GOD
THE ABSOLUTE PLAN
DAN. 9:24

GOD - THE FATHER planned it,
JOHN 10:15-18 : HEB. 10:5b

GOD - THE SON provided it,
JOHN 10:17

GOD - THE HOLY SPIRIT proved it.
1 COR. 12:13

THE ABSOLUTE BLUEPRINT
to achieve a PERFECT
ETERNAL PARADISE-
FREE FROM EVIL
throughout Eternity to come,
based on the Word of GOD

GOD created the
Heaven and the
Earth
GEN. 1:1 : PSALM 19:1

The creation of the Angels

and the realm of their habitation

LUCIFER (Highest Position) ISA. 14:12; EZEK. 28:12-15
MICHAEL (Arch Angel)
GABRIEL (Mighty Angel) well informed

CELESTIAL CREATURES
endowed with a choice

- CHERUBIM (Defenders)
- SERAPHIM (Worship)
- LIVING CREATURES (Glorious Majesty)
- ANGELIC HOST (Innumerable)

GEN. 1:3
Restored Earth
Six day creation

GARDEN
OF EDEN

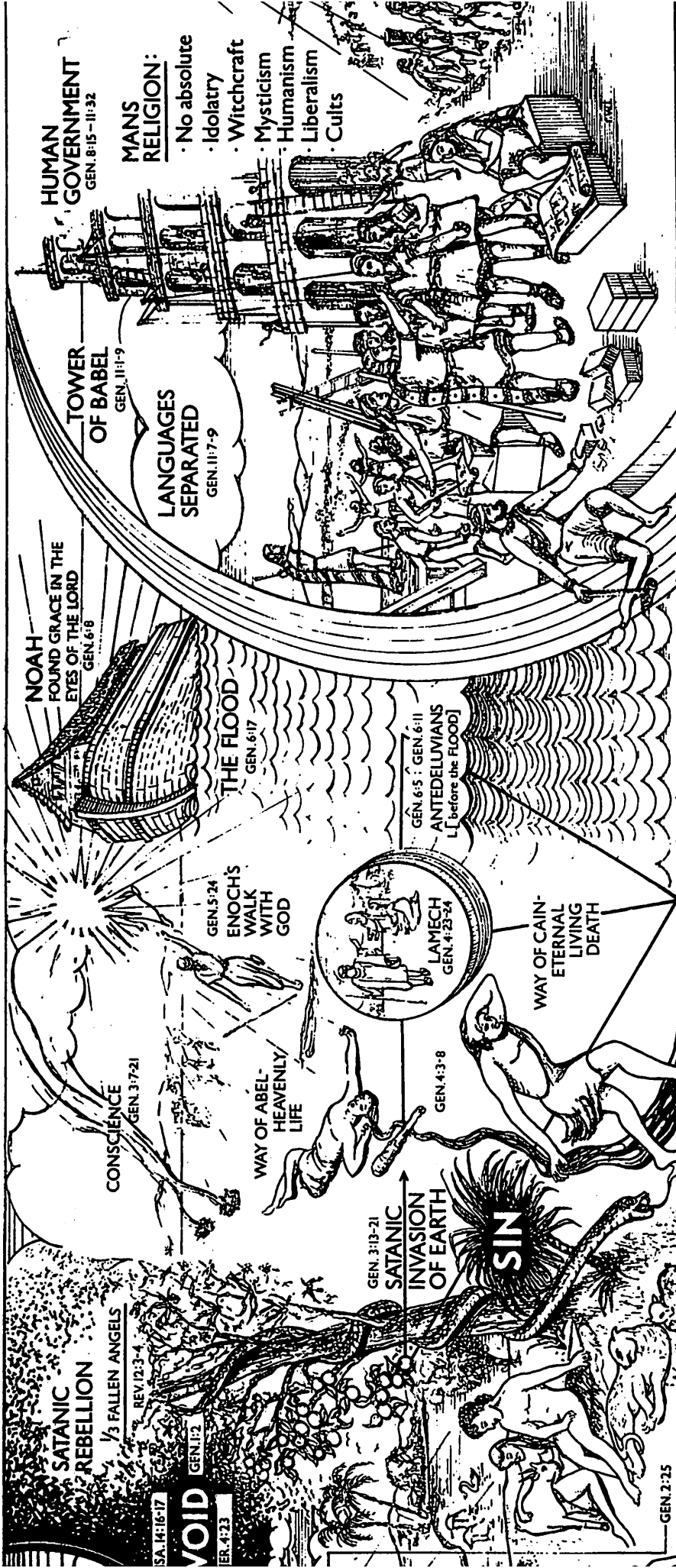


GOD'S PLAN OF ALL AGES by REV. DR. ANDREW J. LOSER
Scroll graphics and illustrations by Raymond W. Loser - Copyright pending 1986

Jupiter Printing Inc., Jupiter, Fla., U.S.A.

The following pages have been perforated and printed on one side only for those who wish to remove the God's Plan of All Ages Chart and assemble it on a wall or into a scroll.

NOT TO BE SOLD



HUMAN GOVERNMENT
GEN. 8:15 - 11:32

MANS RELIGION:

- No absolute
- Idolatry
- Witchcraft
- Mysticism
- Humanism
- Liberalism
- Cults

TOWER OF BABEL
GEN. 11:1-9

LANGUAGES SEPARATED
GEN. 11:7-9

NOAH FOUND GRACE IN THE EYES OF THE LORD
GEN. 6:8

THE FLOOD
GEN. 6:17

ANTEDELUVIANS
[before the FLOOD]

ENOCH'S WALK WITH GOD
GEN. 5:24

LAMECH
GEN. 4:23-24

WAY OF CAIN - ETERNAL LIVING DEATH

CONSCIENCE
GEN. 3:7-21

WAY OF ABEL - HEAVENLY LIFE

GEN. 4:3-8

SIN
GEN. 3:13-21
SATANIC INVASION OF EARTH

SATANIC REBELLION
1/3 FALLEN ANGELS
REV. 12:3-4

GEN. 1:2

VOID
ER. 4:23

GEN. 2:25
INNOCENCE

ETERNAL LIVING DEATH — THE BROAD WAY THAT

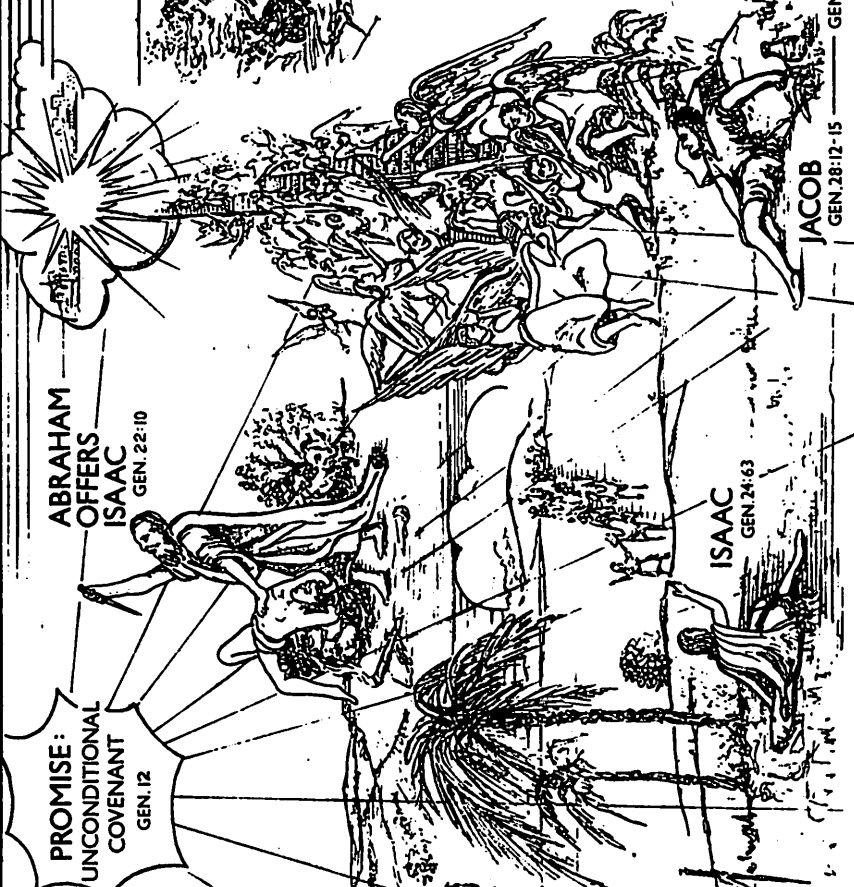
God
SCATTERED MANKIND
 GEN. 11:8

LINEAGE OF SHEM
 GEN. 11:10-32

- SHEM
- Arphaxad
- Salah
- Eber
- Peleg
- Reu
- Serug
- Nahor
- Terah
- (Abram)
- ABRAHAM**

PROMISE: UNCONDITIONAL COVENANT
 GEN. 12

ABRAHAM OFFERS ISAAC
 GEN. 22:10



ISAAC
 GEN. 24:63

GOD SEPARATED MESSIANIC LINE



MOSES CROSSES THE RED SEA
 EXODUS 14:26-31



MOSES GIVING OF THE
 EXODUS 35:1

JACOB/ISRAEL
 GEN. 32:28



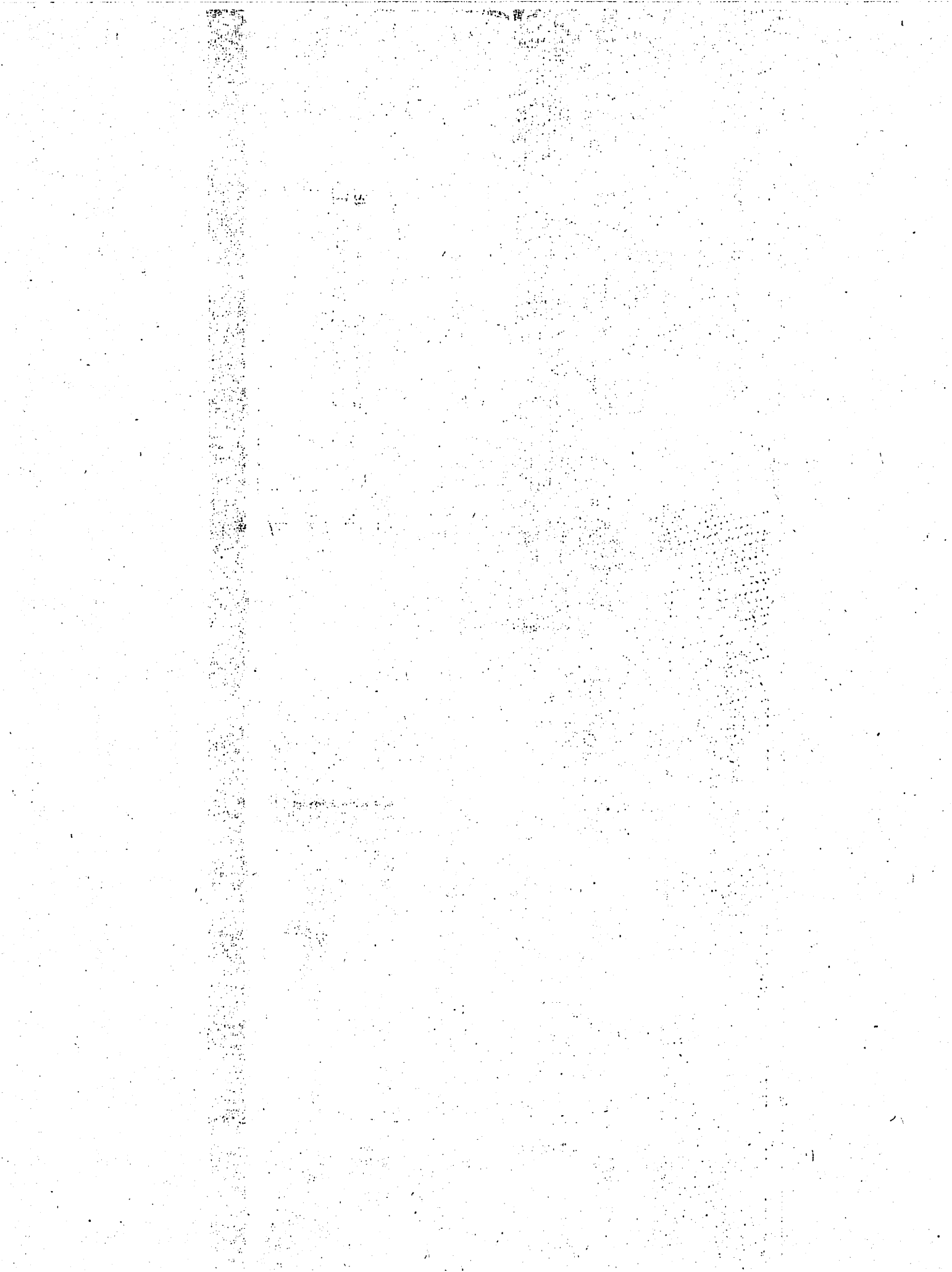
JACOB'S prophetic declaration to his sons. GEN. 49:3-28

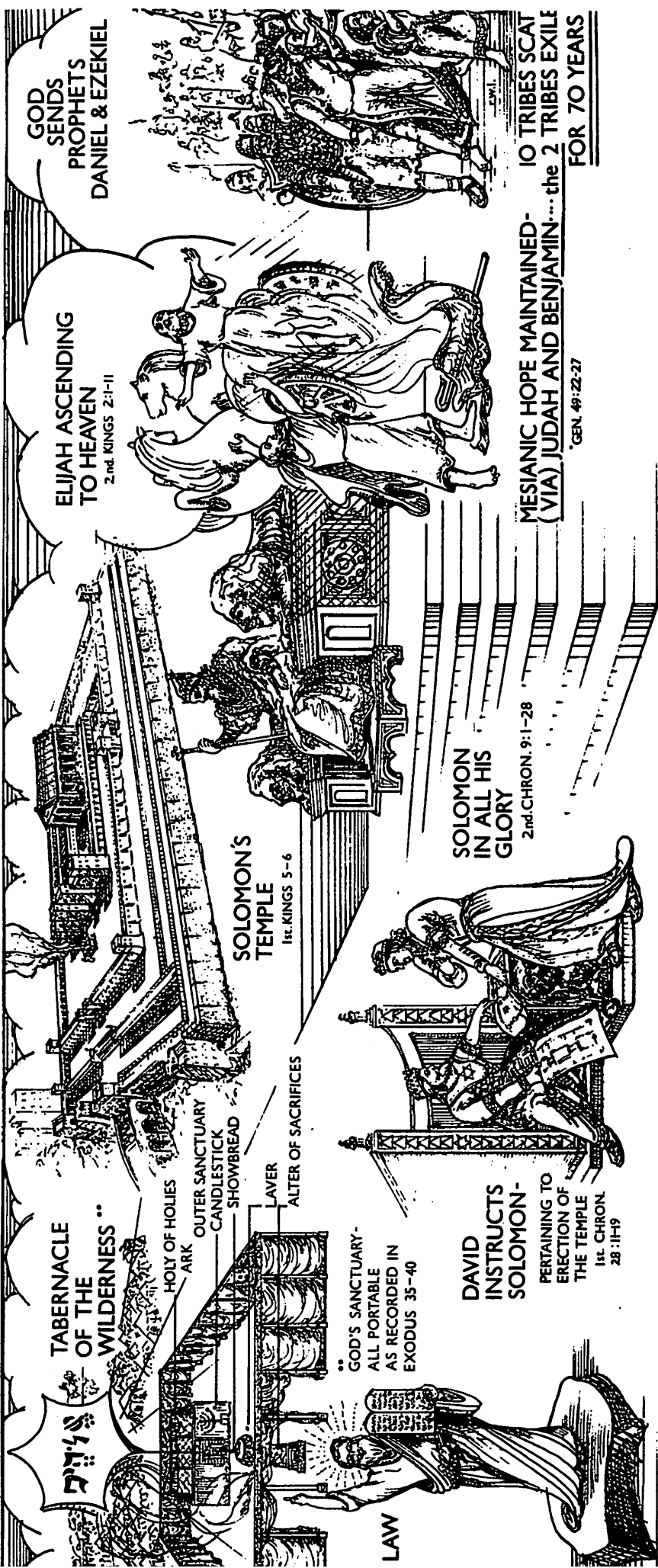
- REUBEN
- SIMEON
- LEVI
- JUDAH*
- ZEBULUN
- ISSACHAR
- DAN
- GAD
- ASHER
- NAPHTALI
- JOSEPH
- BENJAMIN

(The twelve tribes of ISRAEL)

JACOB
 GEN. 28:12-15 — GEN. 28:16-22

LEADS TO DESTRUCTION GAL. 5:19-21; ADULTERY, FORNICATION, UNCLEANNESS





GOD SENDS PROPHETS DANIEL & EZEKIEL

ELIJAH ASCENDING TO HEAVEN 2nd. KINGS 2:1-11

TABERNACLE OF THE WILDERNESS

SOLOMON'S TEMPLE 1st. KINGS 5-6

SOLOMON IN ALL HIS GLORY 2nd. CHRON. 9:1-28

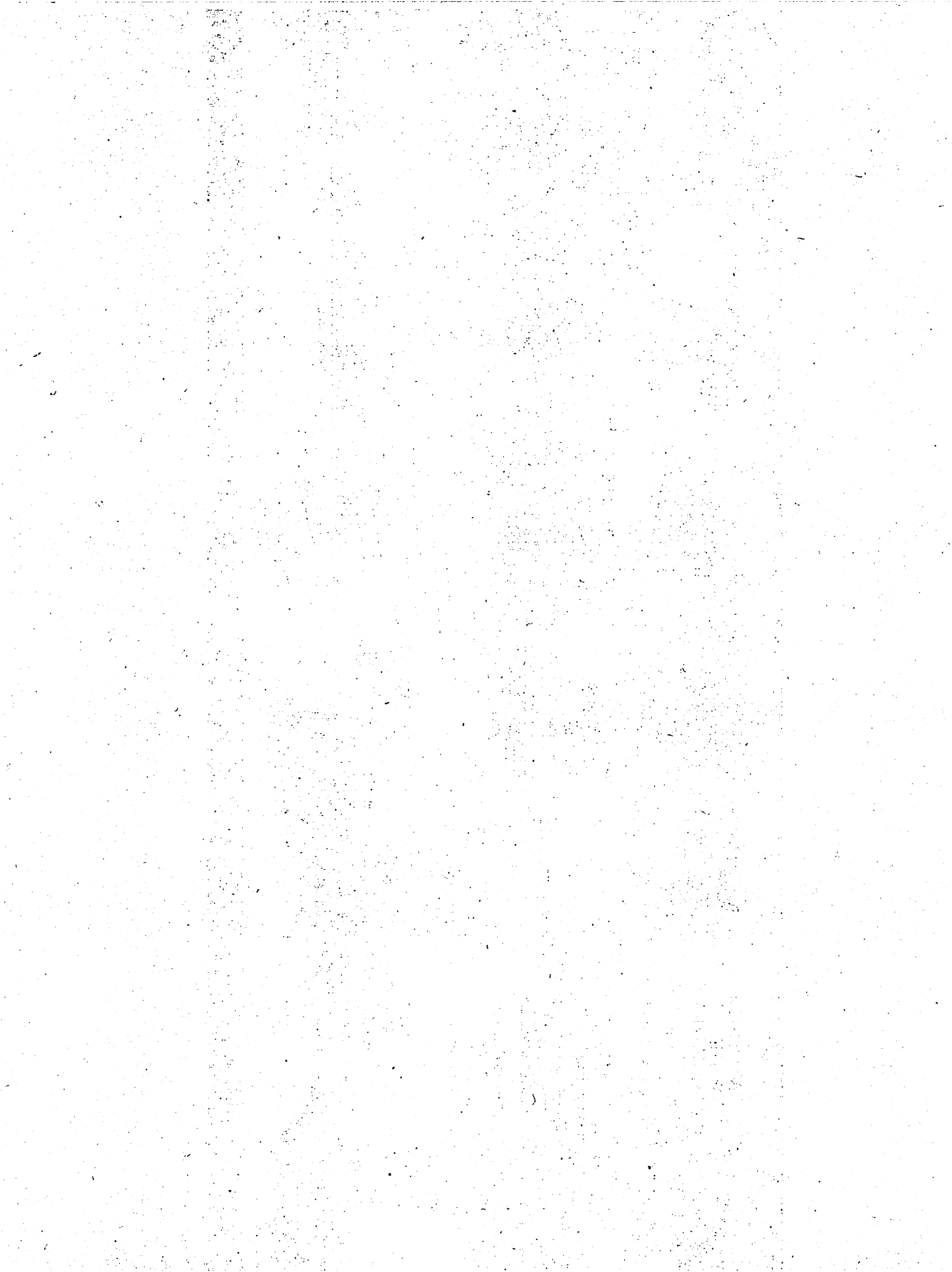
DAVID INSTRUCTS SOLOMON -

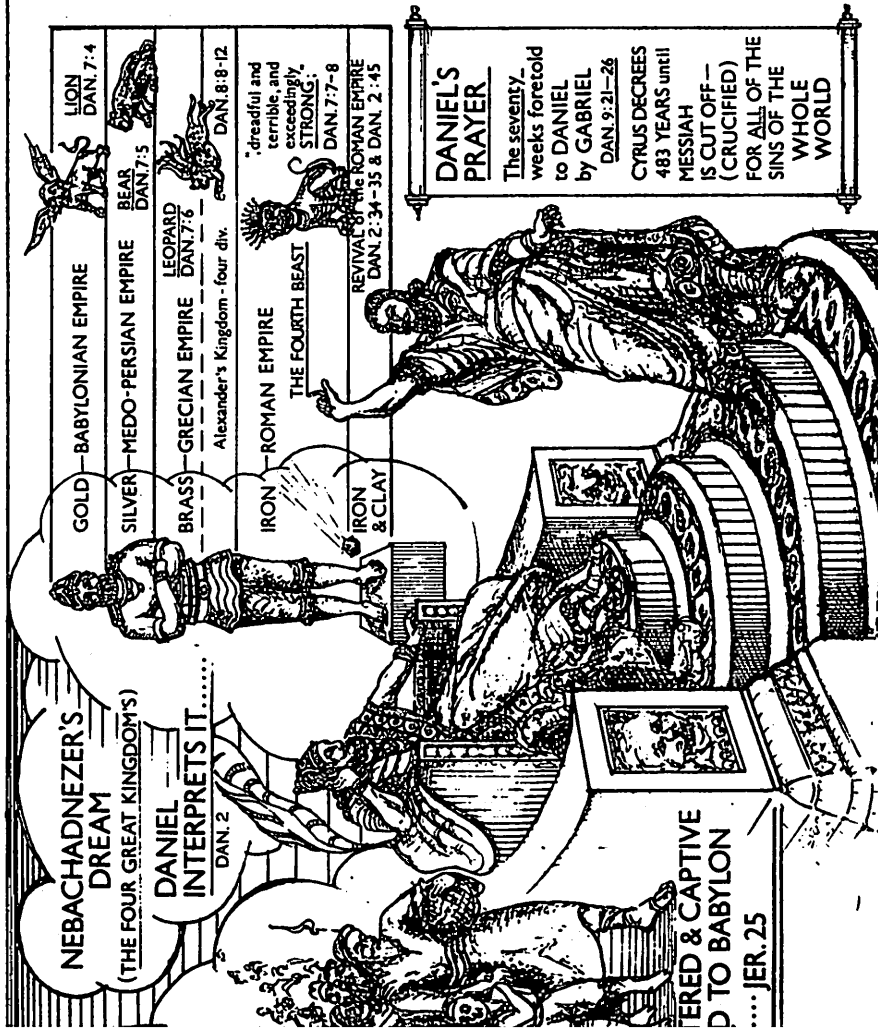
PERTAINING TO ERECTION OF THE TEMPLE 1st. CHRON. 28:1-19

MESIANIC HOPE MAINTAINED - (VIA) JUDAH AND BENJAMIN... the 2 TRIBES EXILE FOR 70 YEARS GEN. 49:22-27

10 TRIBES SCAT the 2 TRIBES EXILE FOR 70 YEARS

SS, LASCIVIOUSNESS, IDOLATRY, SORCERY, HATRED, STRIFE, JEALOUSY,





NEBACHADNEZER'S DREAM (THE FOUR GREAT KINGDOMS)

DANIEL INTERPRETS IT..... DAN. 2

GOLD - BABYLONIAN EMPIRE

SILVER - MEDO-PERSIAN EMPIRE

BRASS - GRECIAN EMPIRE

Alexander's Kingdom - four div.

IRON - ROMAN EMPIRE

THE FOURTH BEAST

IRON & CLAY

REVIVAL OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE DAN. 2:34-35 & DAN. 2:45

LION DAN. 7:4

BEAR DAN. 7:5

LEOPARD DAN. 7:6

DAN. 8:8-12

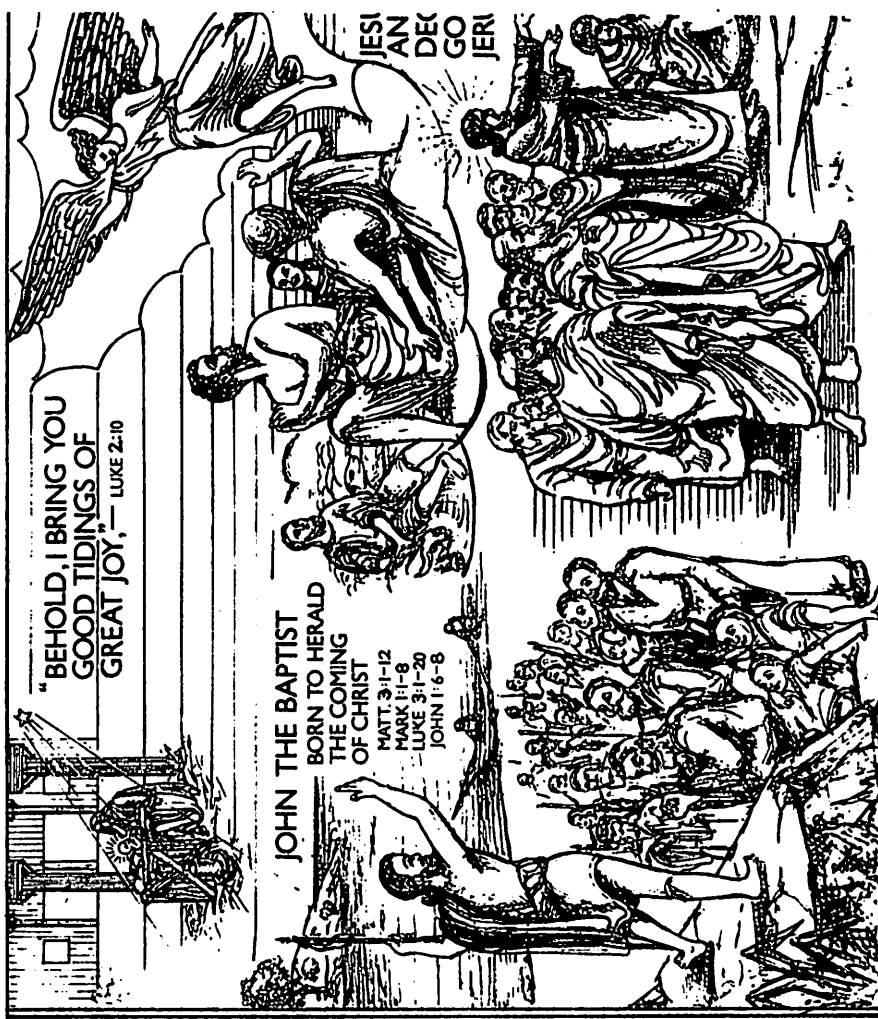
"dreadful and terrible, and exceedingly STRONG"

DAN. 7:7-8

DANIEL'S PRAYER

The seventy weeks foretold to DANIEL by GABRIEL DAN. 9:21-26

CYRUS DECREES 483 YEARS UNTIL MESSIAH IS CUT OFF - (CRUCIFIED) FOR ALL OF THE SINS OF THE WHOLE WORLD



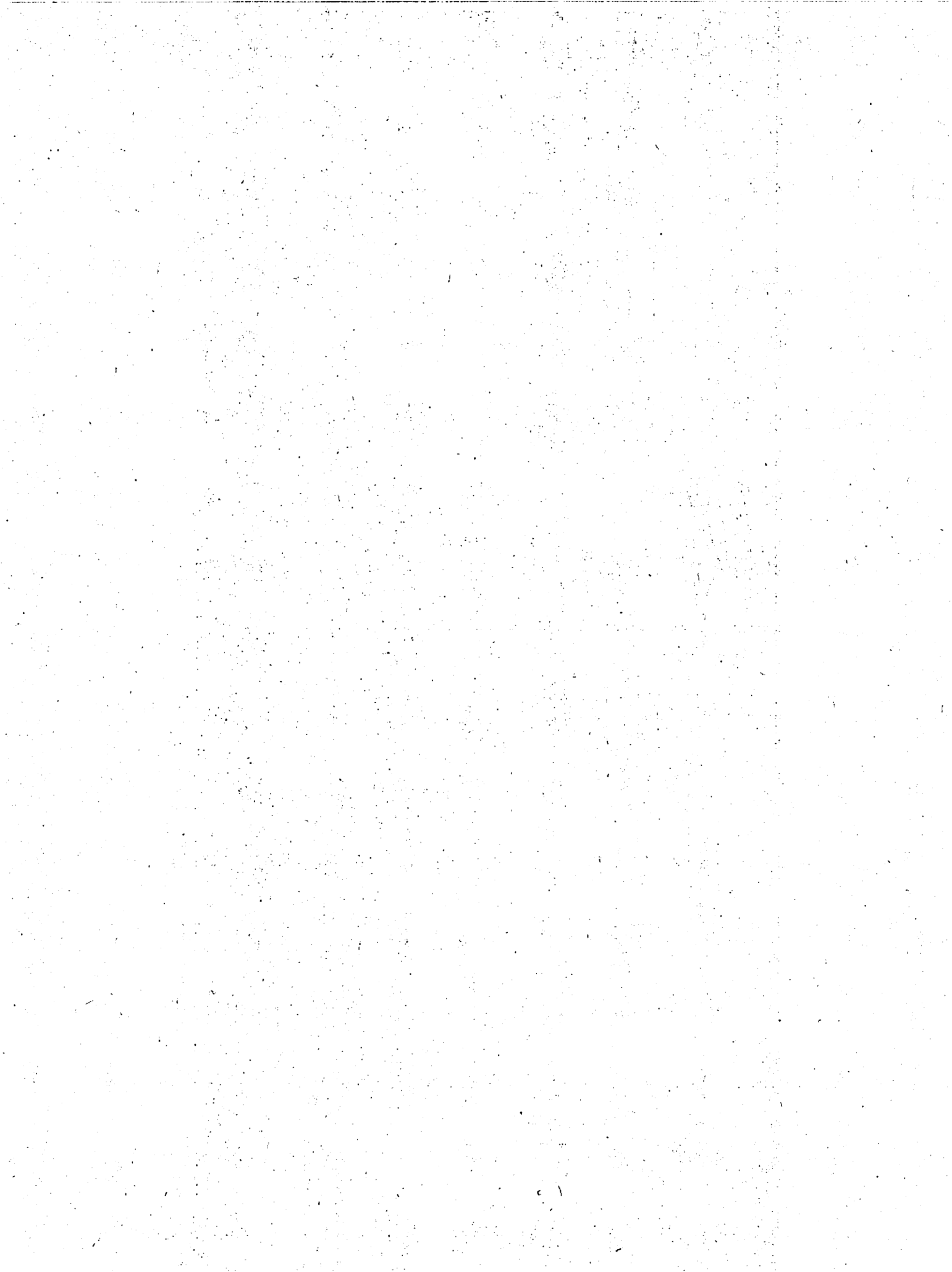
"BEHOLD, I BRING YOU GOOD TIDINGS OF GREAT JOY," - LUKE 2:10

JOHN THE BAPTIST BORN TO HERALD THE COMING OF CHRIST

MATT. 3:1-12
MARK 1:1-8
LUKE 3:1-20
JOHN 1:6-8

JESI AN DEC GO JERI

WRATH, FACTIONS, SEDITIONS, HERESIES, ENVYINGS, MURDERS, ETC. T



THE LAMB OF GOD SACRIFICED

"CHRIST DIED FOR US" ROM 5:8-10 40 DAYS

MARK 10:32-34

... HIS IPLES NG TO SALEM



JOEL 2:28

THE DAY OF PENTECOST

ACTS 2:1-12

CHRIST IN GLORY

THE AGE OF GRACE

THE CHURCH AGE FROM PENTECOST TO RAPTURE - OF BELIEVERS -

EPHESUS REV 2:1-7 Apostolic good works

LAODICEA REV 3:14-22 Apostasy

PHILADELPHIA REV 3:7-13 Missionary

SARDIS REV 3:1-6 Reformation

THYATIRA REV 2:18-29 Idolatry

PERGAMUS REV 2:12-17 Formal Religion

SMYRNA REV 2:8-11 Suffering Church

JUDGEMENT SEAT OF CHRIST

2nd COR. 5:10 1st COR. 3:13-15

1st THESS. 4:13-18

JOHN 14:1-6

THE RAPTURE (MEETING IN THE AIR)

JOHN 3:16

SATAN DRIVEN OUT OF HEAVEN BY MICHAEL AND HIS ARMY (3 1/2 yrs.) JACOBS

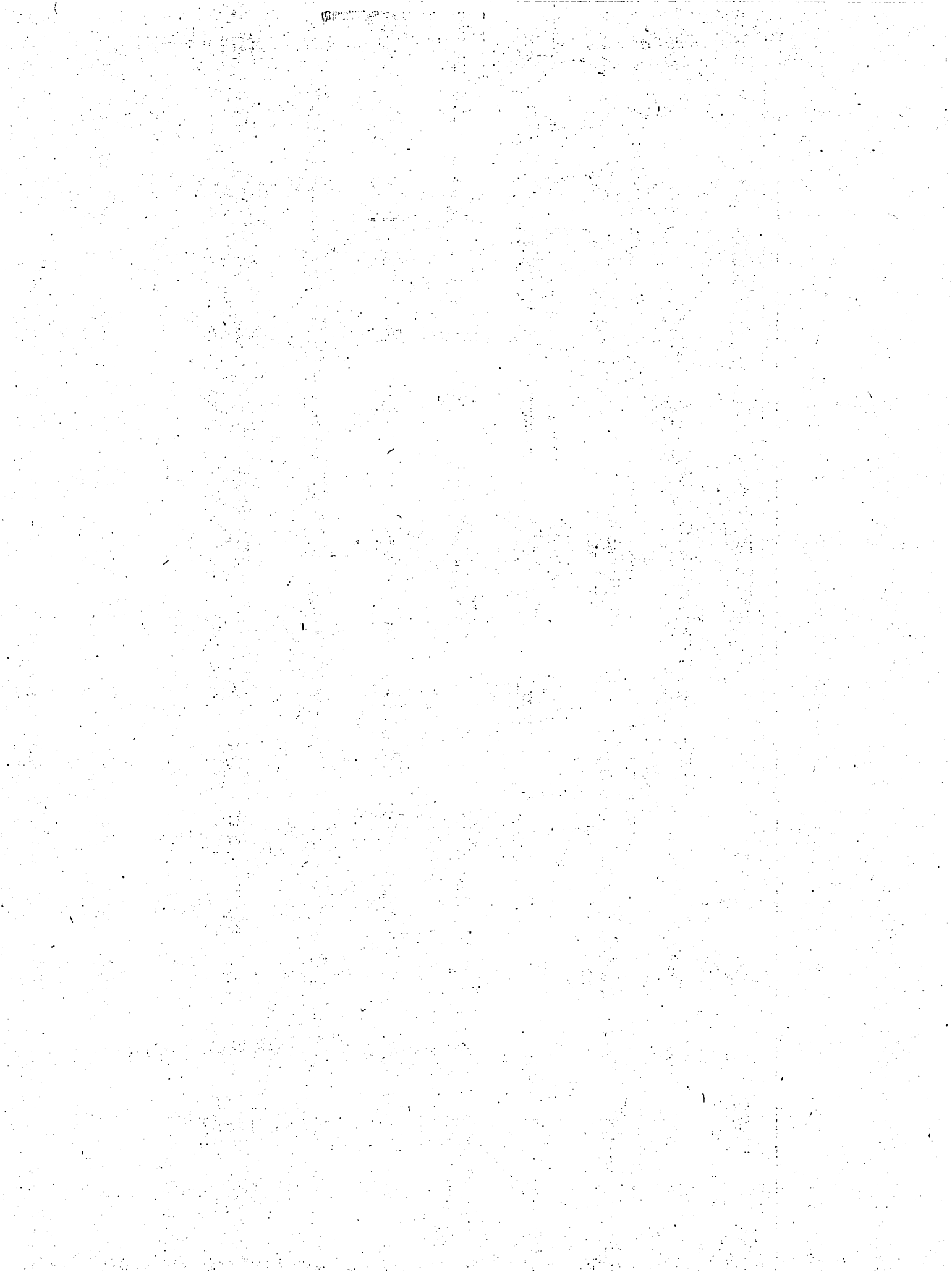
THE KEY GIVEN TO SATAN REV 9:1-21

REV. 5: 00000000

REV. 9:7

REV. 12:7-17

THE REJECTION OF CHRIST AS THE ETERNAL SON OF GOD



MARRIAGE OF THE LAMB OF GOD
REV. 19:7
THE MARRIAGE SUPPER
REV. 19:17

ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION
MATT. 24:15

MYSTERY BABYLON
REV. 17:1-18
REV. 18:1-24

TROUBLE (3 1/2 yrs.)

THE GREAT TRIBULATION
(70th - Seven)
OF DANIEL
9:26,27

THE BEAST & FALSE PROPHET

CAST INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE
REV. 19:20

THE LORD JESUS CHRIST RETURNS TO REIGN OVER HIS (RIGHTEOUS) KINGDOM ON EARTH
1st THESS. 3:13 : REV. 11:15
REV. 19:11-21 : ISAIAH 40:10

HEAVENLY RIGHTEOUSNESS COMING DOWN UPON THE EARTH

"Thy Kingdom come, Thy will be done ON EARTH, as it is in HEAVEN"
MATT. 6:10

1000 YEAR KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS ESTABLISHED
REV. 20:6

NATURE RESTORED
ISAIAH 11:6-9

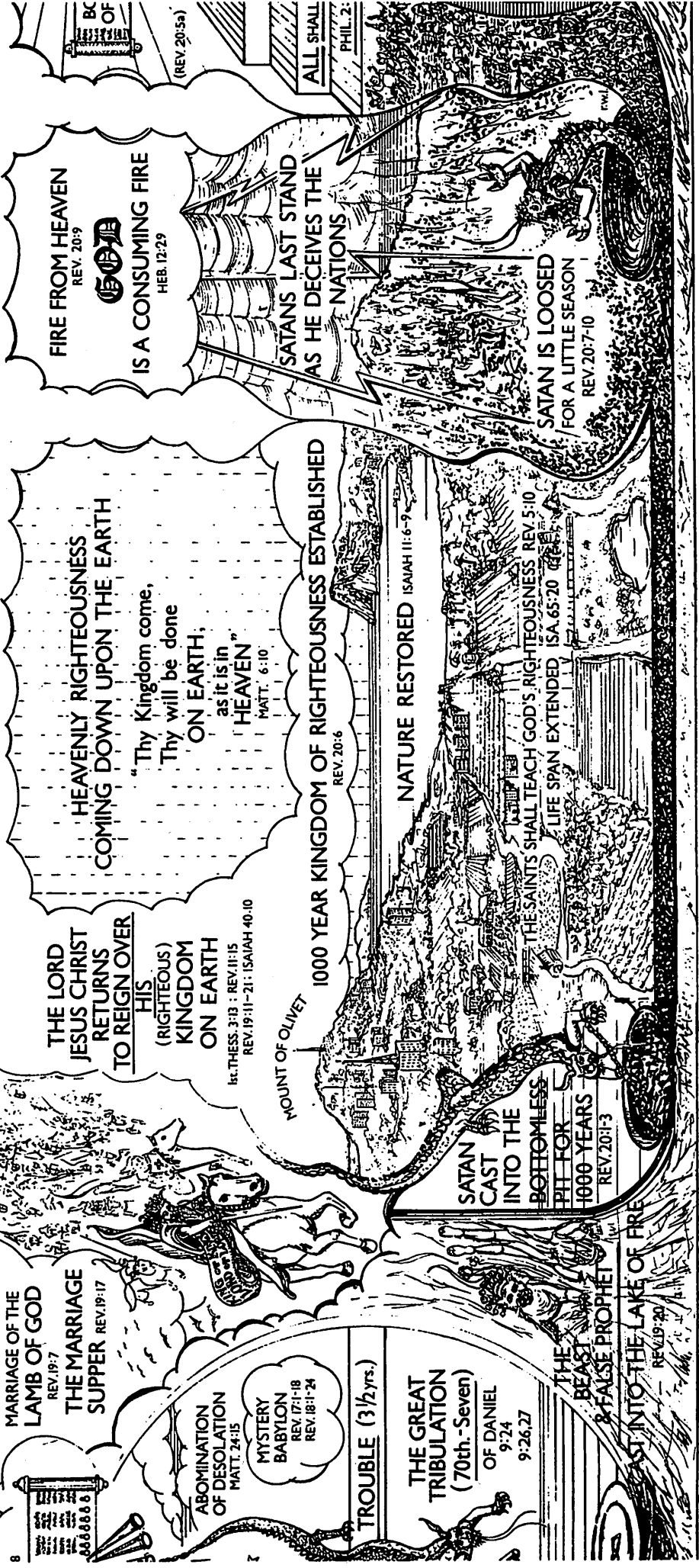
THE SAINTS SHALL TEACH GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS
REV. 5:10
LIFE SPAN EXTENDED
ISA. 65:20

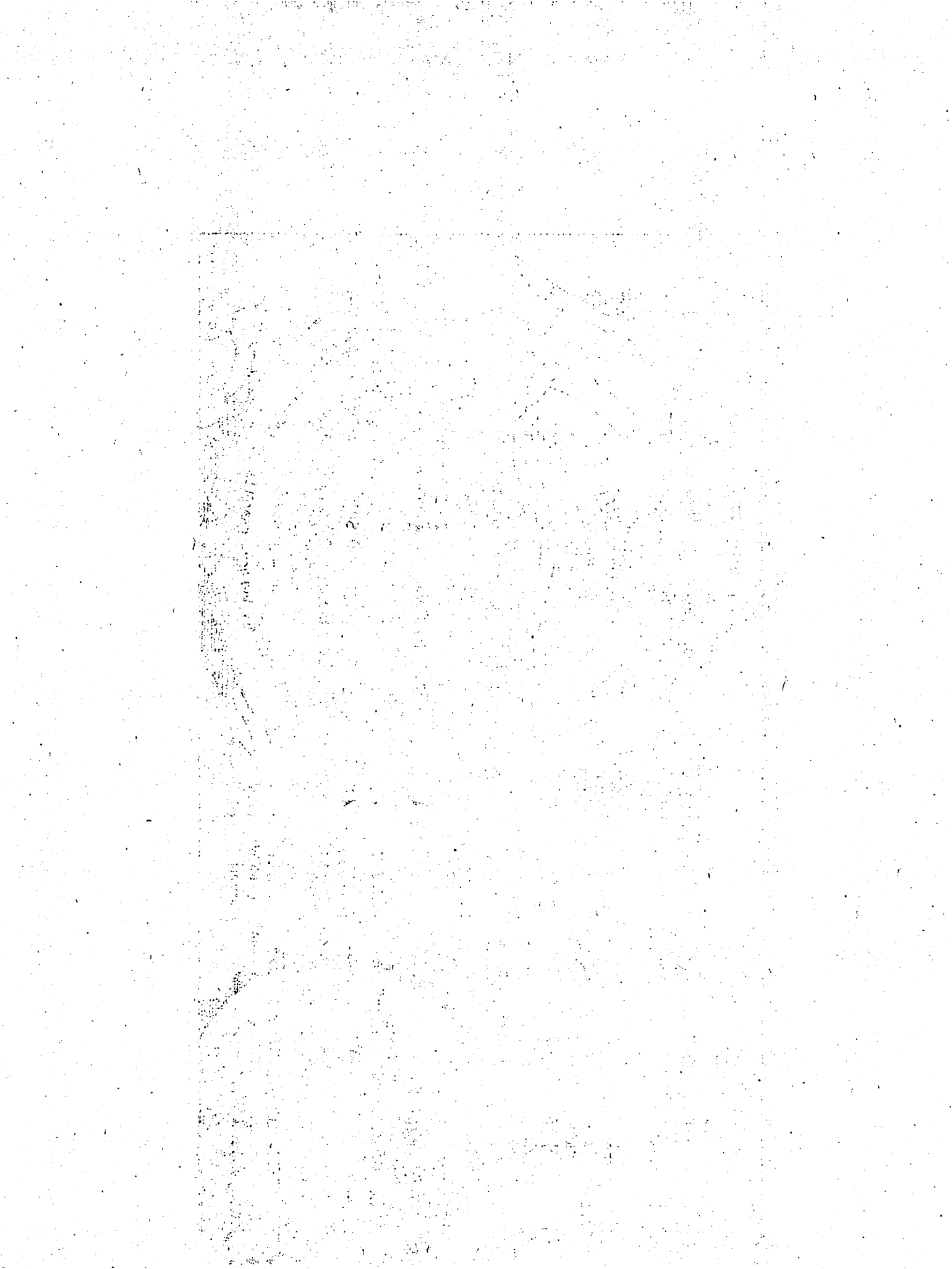
FIRE FROM HEAVEN
REV. 20:9
IS A CONSUMING FIRE
HEB. 12:29

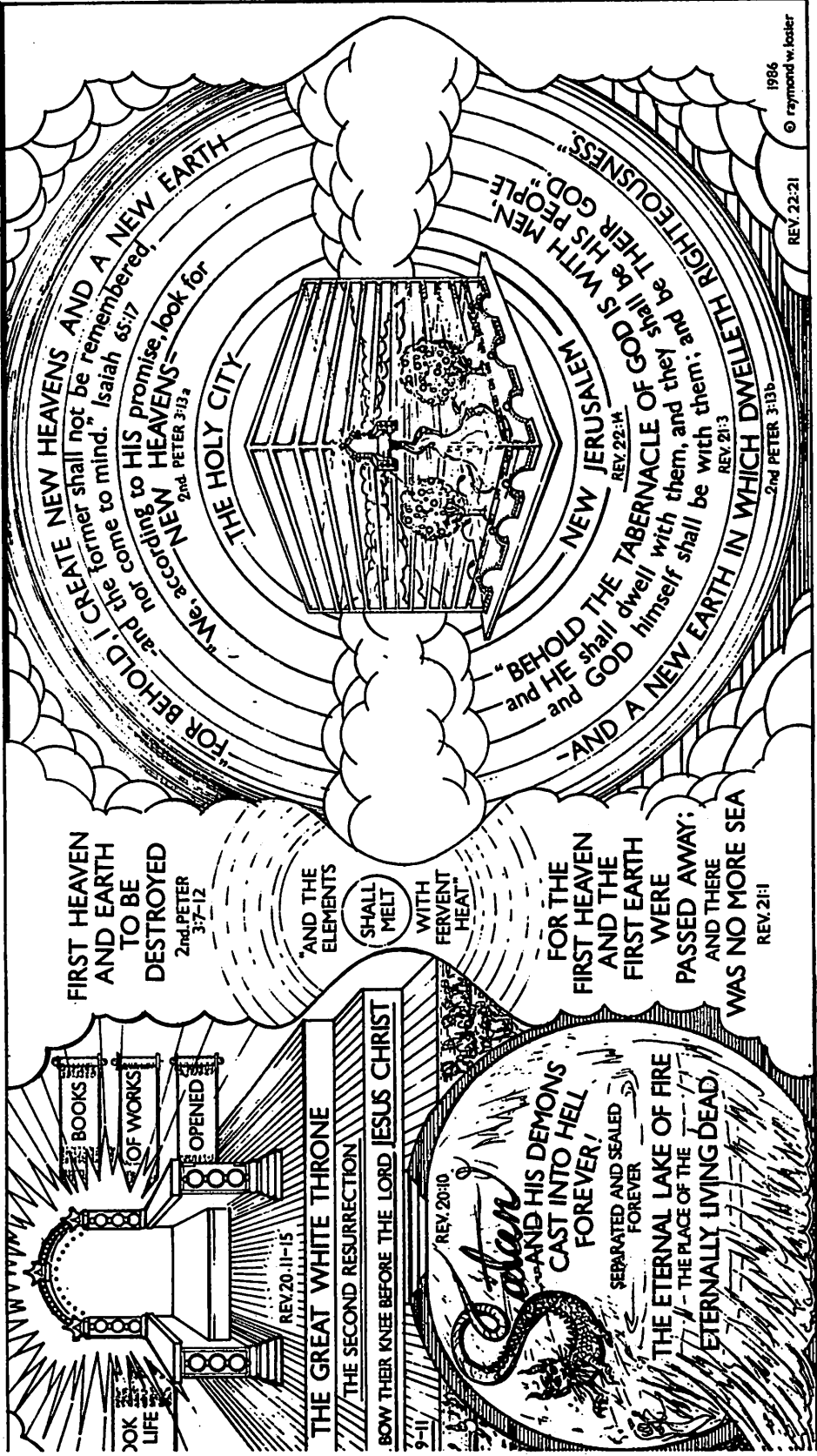
SATANS LAST STAND AS HE DECEIVES THE NATIONS

SATAN IS LOOSE FOR A LITTLE SEASON
REV. 20:7-10

SATAN CAST INTO THE BOTTOMLESS PIT FOR 1000 YEARS
REV. 20:1-3







FIRST HEAVEN
AND EARTH
TO BE
DESTROYED
2nd PETER
3:7-12

AND THE
ELEMENTS
SHALL
MELT
WITH
FERVENT
HEAT

FOR THE
FIRST HEAVEN
AND THE
FIRST EARTH
WERE
PASSED AWAY;
AND THERE
WAS NO MORE SEA
REV. 21:1

BOOKS
OF WORKS
OPENED

REV. 20:11-15

THE GREAT WHITE THRONE
THE SECOND RESURRECTION

BOW THEIR KNEE BEFORE THE LORD JESUS CHRIST
9-11

REV. 20:10

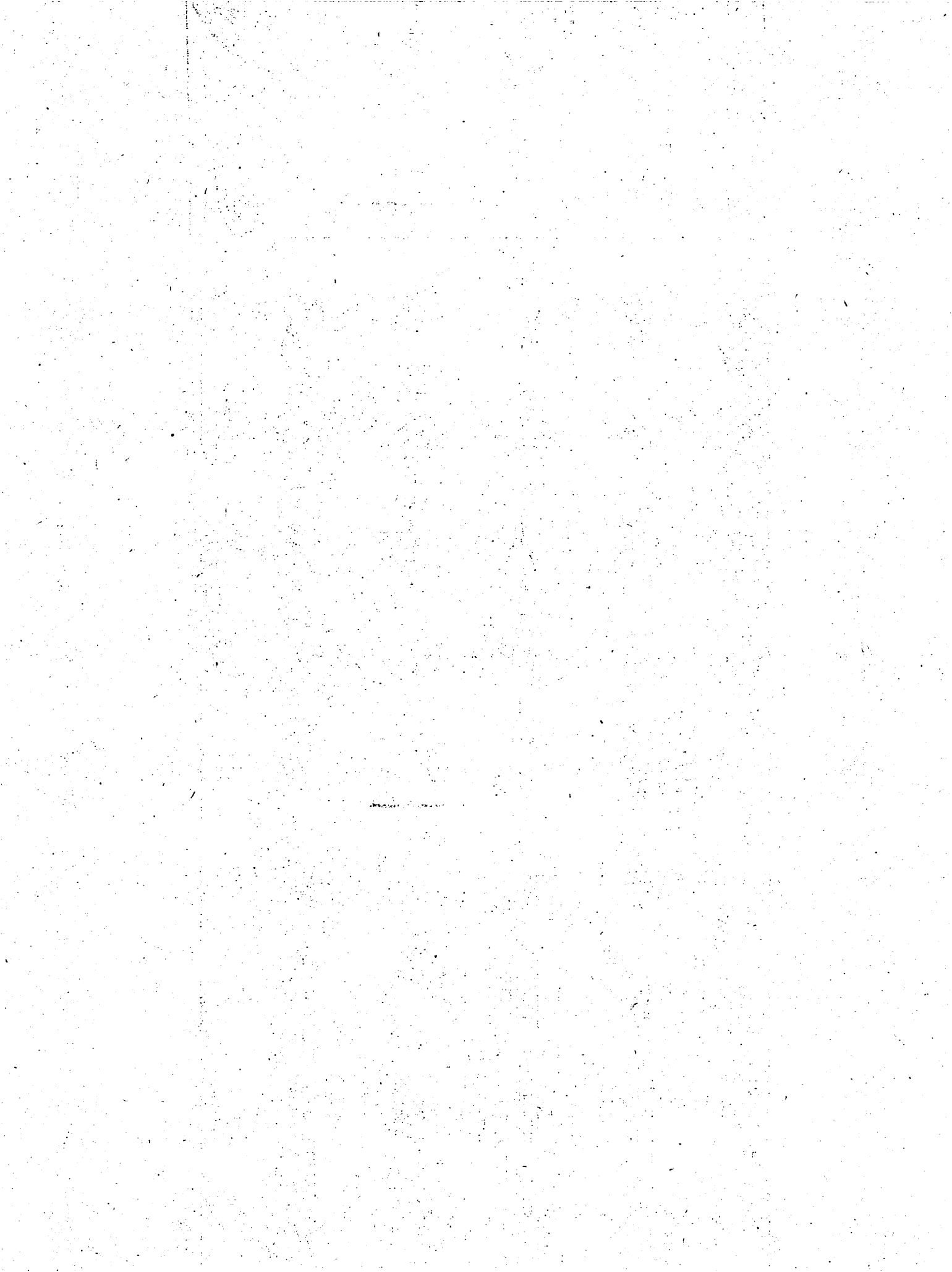
AND HIS DEMONS
CAST INTO HELL
FOREVER!
SEPARATED AND SEALED
FOREVER

THE ETERNAL LAKE OF FIRE
THE PLACE OF THE
ETERNALLY LIVING DEAD

FOR BEHOLD, I CREATE NEW HEAVENS AND A NEW EARTH
and the former shall not be remembered,
nor come to mind. Isaiah 65:17
We, according to HIS promise, look for
NEW HEAVENS—
2nd PETER 3:13,2

THE HOLY CITY

NEW JERUSALEM
REV. 22:14
"BEHOLD THE TABERNACLE OF GOD IS WITH MEN,
and HE shall dwell with them, and they shall be HIS PEOPLE
and GOD himself shall be with them."
REV. 21:3
AND A NEW EARTH IN WHICH DWELLETH RIGHTEOUSNESS"
2nd PETER 3:13b



Publications

by

Rev. Dr. Andrew J. Losier

A Study of the Book of Daniel

Amazing Grace

Analytical Theological Questionnaire Vol I and Vol II

Battleground and Warfare of Christians

Biblical Outline of Sermons

Christ the Eternal Son of God

Difficult Biblical Questions Answered

I am Alpha and Omega

Know Your Bible Rightly Divided

Memoirs of Africa

One World Government under Satan verses the Kingdom of God Established Forever

Praise Share & Care Through Prayer

Second Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ

The Inspired Word of God

The Book of Romans

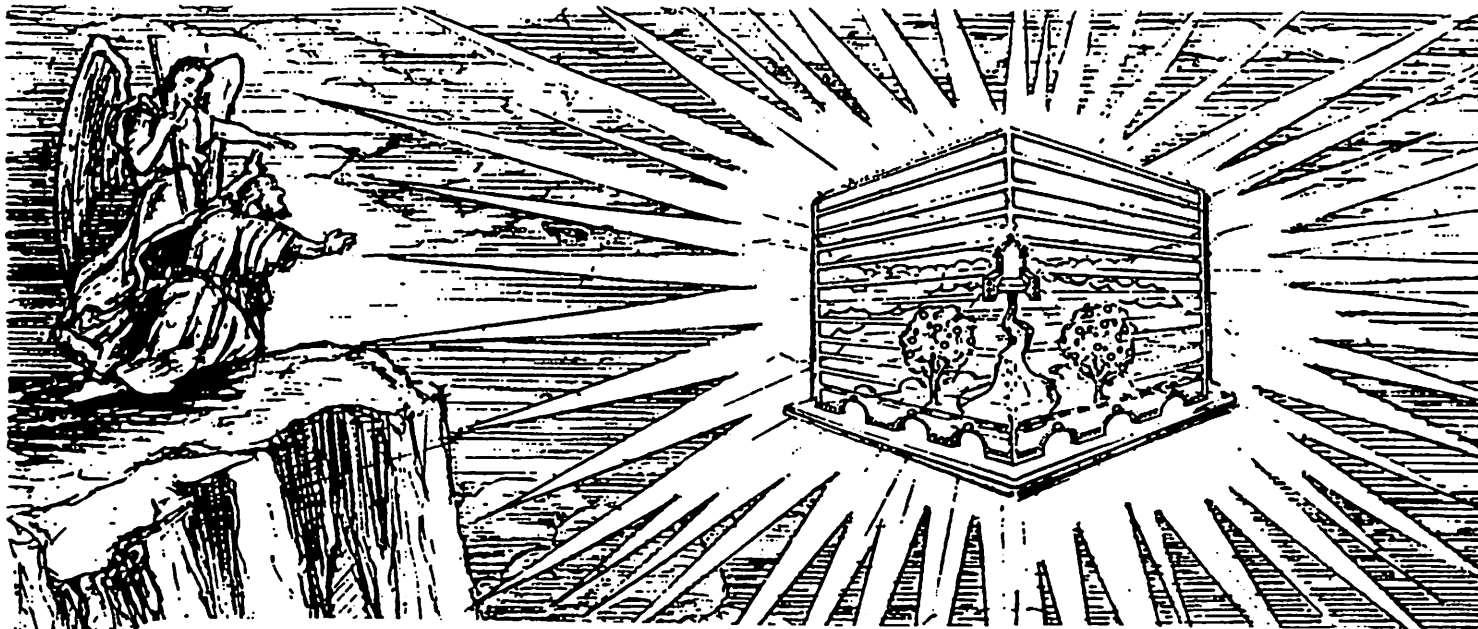
The Cross of Christ

The Holy Spirit

The Glory of God

Treasure Chest of Eternal Gems

What Does the Future Hold?



"And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain and showed me that great city, the Holy Jerusalem, descending out of Heaven from GOD" – Revelation 21 : 10

Author: Rev., Dr. Andrew J. Losier

Missionary in Africa since 1938, established the first of the Christian Literature and Bible Centers in Kenya, East Africa in 1952. Since then, over a billion pieces of FREE CHRISTIAN LITERATURE have been distributed throughout Africa in approximately 50 different languages. The overwhelming response of African Christian leaders to the WORD OF GOD, inspired Rev., Dr. Andrew J. Losier to write this book.

JESUS said "I am ALPHA and OMEGA"

Revelation 1:8

